This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

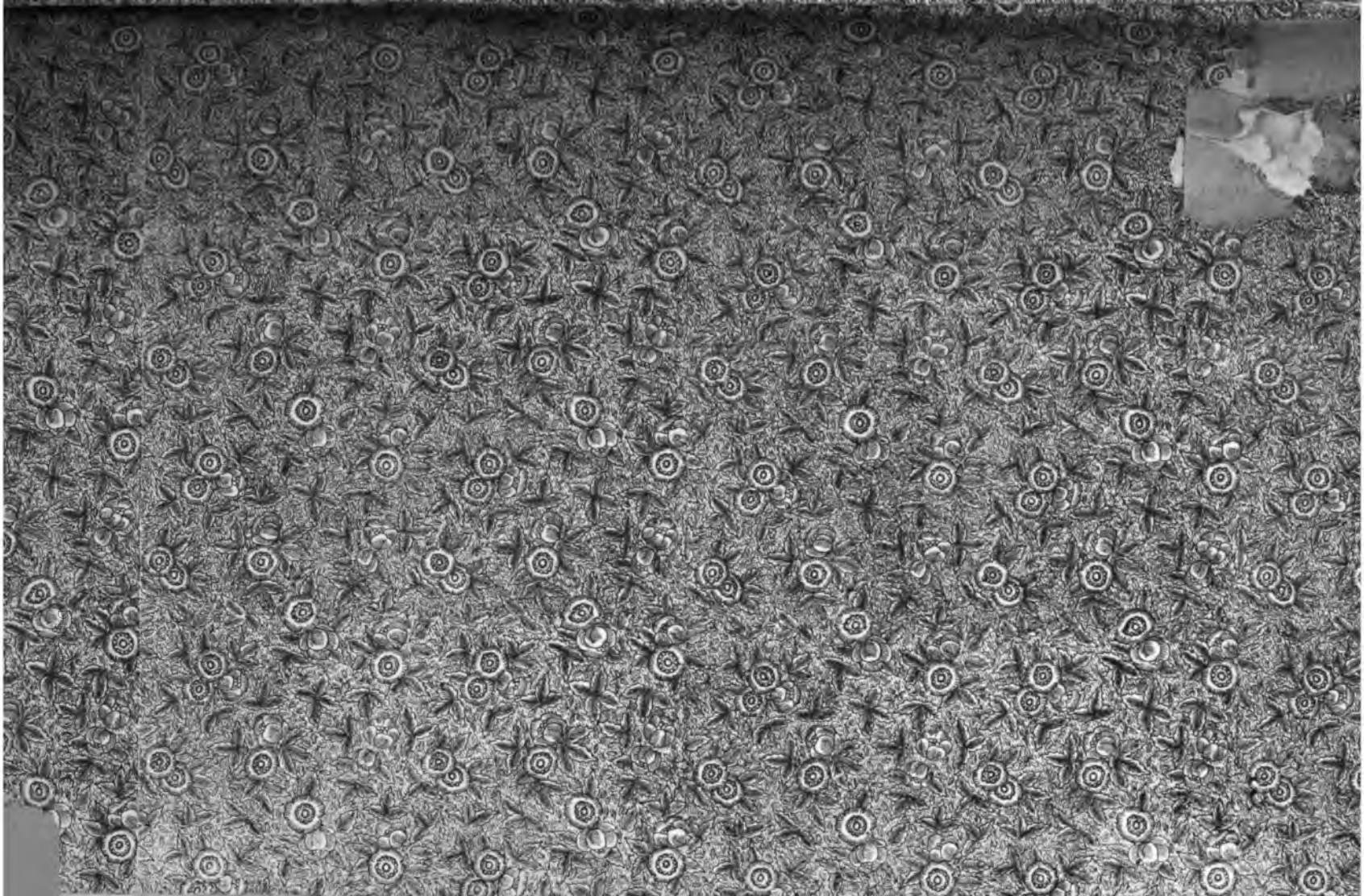
Digitized by Google

23448
39.B

A Gift to
HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
in Memory of
Charles Eliot Norton
1827–1908

From his Children
Richard Norton, Sara Norton, Rupert Norton
Eliot Norton, Margaret Norton
Elizabeth Gaskell Norton
November 16, 1927

GIVEN ON THE HUNDREDTH ANNIVERSARY
OF PROFESSOR NORTON'S BIRTH
NOVEMBER 16, 1927, BY



C. E. Norton.

Shady Hill.

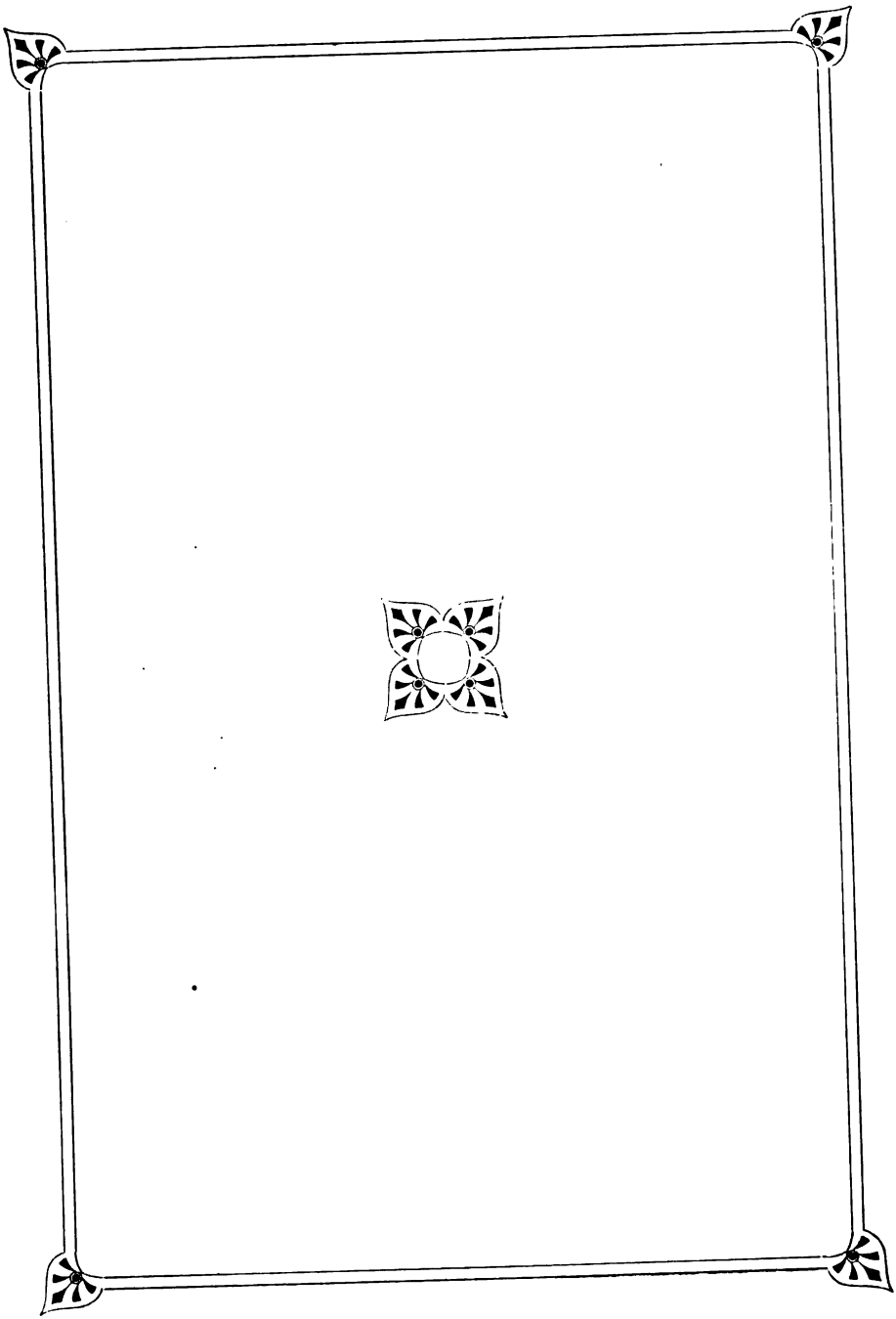
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

WORKS OF EDWARD FITZGERALD.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

WORKS OF

EDWARD FITZGERALD

TRANSLATOR OF OMAR KHAYYÁM

REPRINTED
FROM THE ORIGINAL IMPRESSIONS, WITH SOME CORRECTIONS
DERIVED FROM HIS OWN ANNOTATED COPIES

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL. II

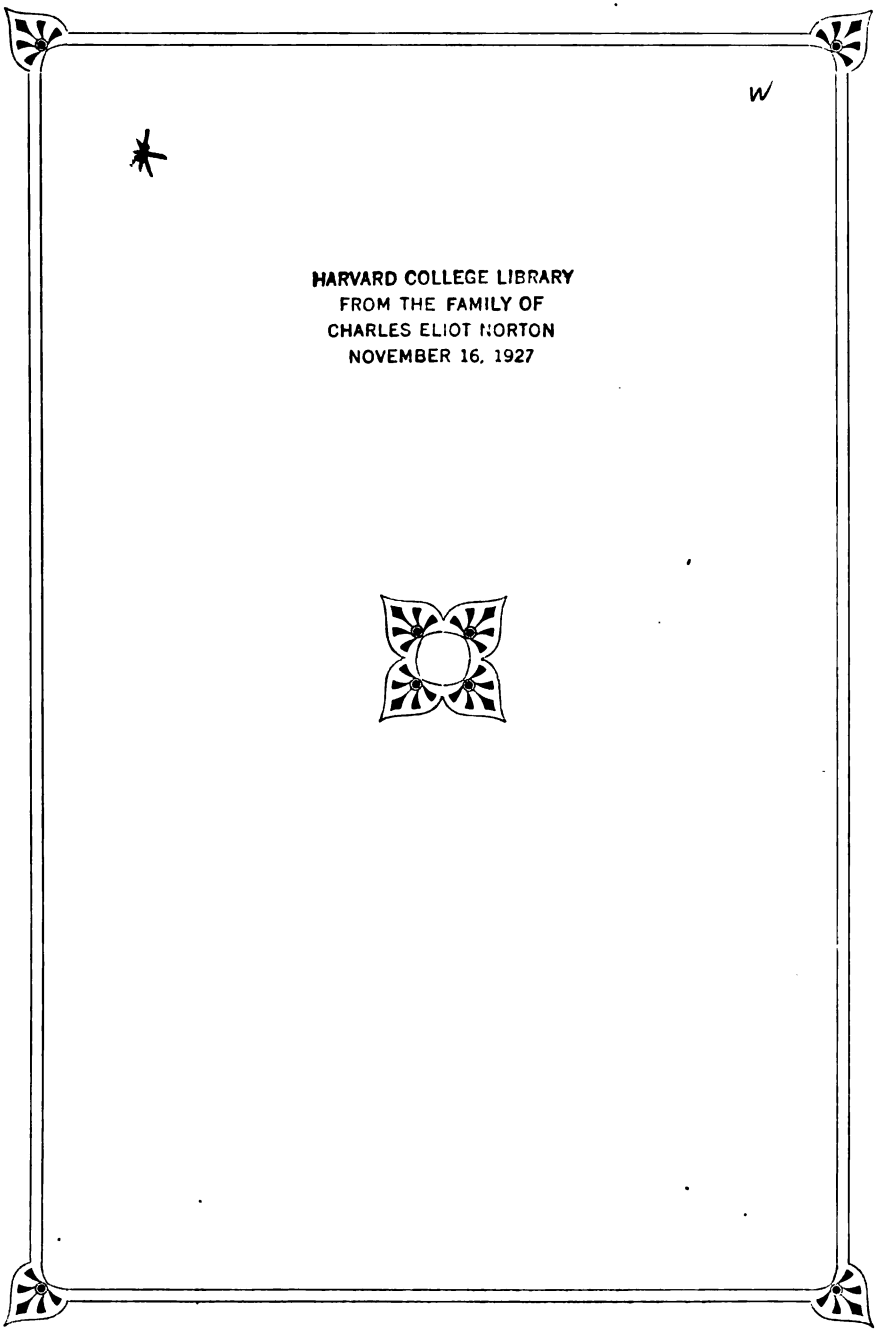
NEW-YORK AND BOSTON
HOUGHTON, MIFFLIN & CO.

LONDON
BERNARD QUARITCH

1887

Digitized by Google

Z 3448.20
I



W

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
FROM THE FAMILY OF
CHARLES ELIOT NORTON
NOVEMBER 16, 1927

Digitized by Google

SIX DRAMAS

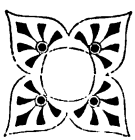
OF

CALDERON.

FREELY TRANSLATED.

[PRINTED FROM THE AUTHOR'S CORRECTED COPY OF HIS EDITION PRINTED IN 1853.]

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

ADVERTISEMENT

IN THE ORIGINAL EDITION.

IN apologising for the publication of so free translations of so famous a poet as Calderon, I must plead, first, that I have not meddled with any of his more famous plays; not one of those on my list being mentioned with any praise, or included in any selection that I know of, except the homely Mayor of Zalamea. Four of these six indeed, as many others in Calderon, may be lookt on as a better kind of what we call melodramas. Such plays as the *Magico Prodigioso* and the *Vida es Sueño* (I cannot rank the Principe Constante among them) require another translator, and, I think, form of translation.

Secondly, I do not believe an exact translation of this poet can be very successful; retaining so much that, whether real or dramatic Spanish passion, is still bombast to English ears, and confounds otherwise distinct outlines of character; Conceits that were a fashion of the day; or idioms that, true and intelligible to one nation, check the current of sympathy in

Digitized by Google

others to which they are unfamiliar; violations of probable, nay *possible*, that shock even healthy romantic licence; repetitions of thoughts and images that Calderon used (and smiled at) as so much stage properties — so much, in short, that is not Calderon's own better self, but concession to private haste or public taste by one who so often relied upon some striking dramatic crisis for success with a not very accurate audience, and who, for whatever reason, was ever averse from any of his dramas being printed.

Choosing therefore such less famous plays as still seemed to me suited to English taste, and to that form of verse in which our dramatic passion prefers to run, I have, while faithfully trying to retain what was fine and efficient, sunk, reduced, altered, and replaced much that seemed not; simplified some perplexities, and curtailed or omitted scenes that seemed to mar the breadth of general effect, supplying such omissions by some lines of after-narrative; and in some measure have tried to compensate for the fulness of sonorous Spanish, which Saxon English at least must forego, by a compression which has its own charm to Saxon ears.

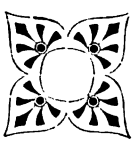
That this, if proper to be done at all, might be better done by others, I do not doubt. Nay, on looking back over these pages, I see where in some cases the Spanish individuality might better have been retained, and northern idiom spared; and doubtless there are many

Digitized by Google

inaccuracies I am not yet aware of. But if these plays prove interesting to the English reader, I and he may be very sure that, whatever of Spain and Calderon be lost, there must be a good deal retained; and I think he should excuse the licence of my version till some other interests him as well at less expense of fidelity.

I hope my *Graciosos* will not be blamed for occasional anachronisms not uncharacteristic of their vocation.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

THE
PAINTER OF HIS OWN DISHONOUR.

(El Pintor de su Deshonra.)

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

FEDERIGO, *Prince of Orsino.*
CELIO, *his Friend.*
DON LUIS, *Governor of Naples.*
PORCIA, *his Daughter.*
ALVARO, *his Son.*
FABIO,
BELARDO, } *their Servants.*
JULIA,
DON JUAN ROCA.
SERAFINA, *his Wife.*
DON PEDRO, *his Father-in-law.*
LEONELO, } *their Servants.*
FLORA,

MASKERS, MUSICIANS, SAILORS, &c.

Digitized by Google

THE

PAINTER OF HIS OWN DISHONOUR.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Room in* DON LUIS' *palace at Naples.* — *Enter* DON LUIS *and* DON JUAN *meeting.*

Luis. ONCE more, a thousand times once more, Don Juan,
Come to my heart.
Juan. And every fresh embrace
Rivet our ancient friendship faster yet!
Luis. Amen to that! Come, let me look at you —
Why, you seem well —
Juan. So well, so young, so nimble,
I will not try to say how well, so much
My words and your conception must fall short
Of my full satisfaction.
Luis. How glad am I
To have you back in Naples!

Digitized by Google

Juan. Ah, Don Luis,
Happier so much than when I last was here,
Nay, than I ever thought that I could be.
Luis. How so?
Juan. Why, when I came this way before,
I told you (do you not remember it?)
How teased I was by relatives and friends
To marry — little then disposed to love —
Marriage perhaps the last thing in my thoughts —
Liking to spend the spring time of my youth
In lonely study.
Luis. Ay, ay, I remember: [night
Nothing but books, books, books — still day and
Nothing but books; or, fairly drowsed by them,
By way of respite to that melancholy,
The palette and the pencil —
In which you got to such a mastery
As smote the senseless canvas into life.
O, I remember all — not only, Juan,
When you were here, but I with you in Spain,
What fights we had about it!
Juan. So it was —
However, partly wearied, partly moved
By pity at my friends' anxieties,
Who press'd upon me what a shame it were
If such a title and estate as mine
Should lack a lineal inheritor,

Digitized by Google

At length I yielded —
Fanned from the embers of my later years
A passion which had slept in those of youth,
And took to wife my cousin Serafina,
The daughter of Don Pedro Castellano. [were here
Luis. I know; you showed me when you last
The portrait of your wife that was to be,
And I congratulated you.
Juan. Well now
Still more congratulate me — as much more
As she is fairer than the miniature
We both enamoured of. At the first glance
I knew myself no more myself, but hers,
Another (and how much a happier!) man. [brass,
Luis. Had I the thousand tongues, and those of
That Homer wished for, they should utter all
Congratulation. Witty too, I hear,
As beautiful?
Juan. Yourself shall judge of all,
For even now my lady comes; awhile
To walk the Flora of your shores, and then
Over your seas float Venus-like away. [long,
Luis. Not *that*, till she have graced our gardens
If once we get her here. But is she here? [needs
Juan. Close by — she and her father, who would
See her abroad; and I push'd on before
To apprise you of our numbers — so much more

Digitized by Google

Than when I first proposed to be your guest,
That I entreat you —
Luis. What?
Juan. — to let us go,
And find our inn at once — not over-load
Your house.
Luis. Don Juan, you do me an affront —
What if all Naples came along with you? —
My heart — yes, and my house — should welcome
Juan. I know. But yet — [them.
Luis. But yet, no more "but yets" —
Come to my house, or else my heart shall close
Its doors upon you.
Juan. Nay, I dare not peril
A friendship —
Luis. Why, were 't not a great affront
To such a friendship — when you learn besides,
I have but held this government till now
Only to do you such a courtesy.
Juan. But how is this?
Luis. Sickness and age on-coming,
I had determined to retire on what
Estate I had — no need of other wealth —
Beside, Alvaro's death — my only son —
Juan. Nay, you have so felicitated me,
I needs must *you*, Don Luis, whose last letter
Told of a gleam of hope in that dark quarter.

Digitized by Google

Luis. A sickly gleam — you know the ship he sail'd in
Was by another vessel, just escaped
The selfsame storm, seen to go down — it seem'd
With all her souls on board.
Juan. But how assured
'T was your son's ship? —
Luis. Alas, so many friends
Were on the watch for him at Barcelona,
Whither his ship was bound, but never came —
Beside the very messenger that brought
The gleam of hope, premised the tragedy —
A little piece of wreck,
That floated to the coast of Spain, and thence
Sent to my hands, with these words scratcht upon 't—
"*Escaped alive, Alvaro.*"
Juan. When was this?
Luis. Oh, months ago, and since no tidings heard,
In spite of all inquiry. But we will hope.
Meanwhile, Serafina — when will she be here?
Juan. She must be close to Naples now.
Luis. Go then,
Tell her from me —
I go not forth to bid her welcome, only
That I may make that welcome sure at home.
Juan. I 'll tell her so. But —

Digitized by Google

Luis. What! another "*But*"?
No more of that. Away with you.— Porcia!
[*Exit* JUAN.

Enter PORCIA.

Daughter, you know (I have repeated it
A thousand times, I think) the obligation
I owe Don Juan Roca.

Porcia. Sir, indeed
I've often heard you talk of him.

Luis. Then listen.
He and his wife are coming here to-day —
Directly.

Por. Serafina!

Luis. Yes.
To be our guests, till they set sail for Spain;
I trust long first —

Por. And I. How glad I am!

Luis. You! what should make you glad?

Por. That Serafina,
So long my playmate, shall be now my guest.

Luis. Ay! I forgot — that 's well, too —
Let us be rivals in their entertainment.
See that the servants, Porcia, dress their rooms
As speedily and handsomely as may be.

Por. What haste can do (which brings its own excuse)
I 'll do — 't is long a proverb hereabout

Digitized by Google

That you are Entertainer-general,
Rather than Governor, of Naples.

Luis. Ay,
I like to honour all who come this way.

Enter LEONELO.

Leonelo. Peace to this house!—and not only that, but a story beside.—A company of soldiers coming to a certain village, a fellow of the place calls out for *two* to be billeted on him. "What!" says a neighbour, "you want a double share of what every one else tries to shirk altogether?" "Yes," says he, "for the more nuisance they are while they stay, the more glad one is of their going." In illustration of which, and also of my master's orders, I crave your Lordship's hand, and your Ladyship's foot, to kiss.

Luis. Welcome, good Leonelo. I was afraid I had overlooked you in receiving your master.

Por. And how does marriage agree with you, Leonelo?

Leon. One gentleman asked another to dine: but such an ill-ordered dinner that the capon was cold, and the wine hot. Finding which, the guest dips a leg of the capon into the wine. And when his host asks him what he 's about — "Only making the wine heat the capon, and the capon cool the wine," says he. Now just this happened in my marriage. My

Digitized by Google

wife was rather too young, and I rather too old; so, as it is hoped —

Por. Foolery, foolery, always! — tell me how Serafina is —

Leon. In a coach.

Por. What answer is that?

Leon. A very sufficient one — since a coach includes happiness, pride, and (a modern author says) respectability.

Por. How so?

Leon. Why, a certain lady died lately, and for some reason or other, they got leave to carry her to the grave in a coach. Directly they got her in,—the body, I mean,—it began to fidget — and when they called out to the coachman —"Drive to St. Sepulchre's!"—"No!" screams she,—"I won't go there yet. Drive to the Prado first; and when I have had a turn there, they may bury me where they please."

Luis. How can you let your tongue run on so?—

Leon. I 'll tell you. A certain man in Barcelona had five or six children: and he gave them each to eat —

(Voices within.) "Way there! way!"

Por. They are coming.

Leon. And in so doing, take that story out of my mouth.

Digitized by Google

Enter JULIA.

Julia. Signor, your guests are just alighting.

Luis. Come, Porcia —

Leon. (No, no, stop you and listen to me about those dear children.)

Por. They are coming upstairs — at the door —

Enter DON JUAN *leading* SERAFINA, DON PEDRO, *and* FLORA — *all in travelling dress.*

Luis. Your hand, fair Serafina, whose bright eyes
Seem to have drawn his lustre from the sun,
To fill my house withal; — a poor receptacle
Of such a visitor.

Por. Nay, 't is for me
To blush for that, in quality of hostess;
Yet, though you come to shame my house-keeping,
Thrice welcome, Serafina.

Serafina. How answer both,
Being too poor in compliment for either!
I 'll not attempt it.

Ped. I am vext, Don Luis,
My son-in-law should put this burden on you.

Luis. Nay, vex not me by saying so.—What burden?
The having such an honour as to be
Your servant? —

Leon. Here 's a dish of compliments!

Digitized by Google

Flora. Better than you can feed your mistress with.

(Guns heard without.)

Juan. What guns are those?

Enter FABIO.

Fabio. The citadel, my lord,
Makes signal of two galleys in full sail
Coming to port.

Luis. More guests! the more the merrier!

Ped. The merrier for them, but scarce for you,
Don Luis.

Luis. Nay, good fortune comes like bad,
All of a heap. What think you, should it be,
As I suspect it is, the Prince Orsino
Returning; whom, in love and duty bound,
I shall receive and welcome —

Juan. Once again,
Don Luis, give me leave —

Luis. And once again,
And once for all, I shall *not* give you leave.
Prithee, no more —
All will be easily arranged. Porcia,
You know your guest's apartments — show her thither:
I 'll soon be back with you.

Ped. Permit us, sir,
To attend you to the port, and wait upon
His Highness.

Digitized by Google

Luis. I dare not refuse that trouble,
Seeing what honour in the prince's eyes
Your company will lend me.
Leon. And methinks
I will go with you too.
Juan. What, for that purpose?
Leon. Yes—and because perhaps among the crowd
I shall find some to whom I may relate
That story of the children and their meat.
[*Exeunt* DON LUIS, PEDRO, JUAN, LEONELO, FABIO, &c.
Ser. Porcia, are they gone?
Por. They are.
Ser. Then I may weep.
Por. Tears, Serafina!
Ser. Nay, they would not stay
Longer unshed. I would not if I could
Hide them from you, Porcia. Why should I,
Who know too well the fount from which they flow?
Por. I only know you weep—no more than that.
Ser. Yet 't is the seeing you again, again
Unlocks them—is it that you do resent
The discontinuance of our early love,
And that you *will* not understand me?
Por. Nay,—
What can I say!
Ser. Let us be *quite* alone.

Digitized by Google

Por. Julia, leave us.

Ser. Flora, go with her.

Julia. Come, shall we go up to the gallery,
And see the ships come in?

Flora. Madam, so please you.

[*Exeunt* FLORA *and* JULIA.

Ser. Well, are we *quite* alone?

Por. Yes, quite.

Ser. All gone.
And none to overhear us?

Por. None.

Ser. Porcia,
You knew me once when I was happy!

Por. Yes,
Or thought you so —

Ser. But now most miserable!

Por. How so, my Serafina?

Ser. You shall hear —
Yes, my Porcia, you remember it,—
That happy, happy time when you and I
Were so united that, our hearts attun'd
To perfect unison, one might believe
That but one soul within two bodies lodg'd.
This you remember?

Por. Oh, how could I forget!

Ser. Think it not strange that so far back I trace
The first beginnings of *another* love,

Digitized by Google

Whose last sigh having now to breathe, whose last
Farewell to sigh, and whose deceased hopes
In one last obsequy to commemorate,
I tell it over to you point by point
From first to last—by such full utterance
My pent up soul perchance may find relief.

Por. Speak, Serafina.

Ser. You have not forgot
Neither, how that close intimacy of ours
Brought with it of necessity some courtesies
Between me and your brother, Don Alvaro—
Whose very name, oh wretched that I am!
Makes memory, like a trodden viper, turn,
And fix a fang in me not sharp enough
To slay at once, but with a lingering death
Infect my life—

Por. Nay, calm yourself.

Ser. We met,
Porcia—and from those idle meetings love
Sprang up between us both—for though 't is true
That at the first I laugh'd at his advances,
And turn'd his boyish suit into disdain,
Yet true it also is that in my heart
There lurk'd a lingering feeling yet behind,
Which if not wholly love, at least was liking,
In the sweet twilight of whose unris'n sun
My soul as yet walk'd hesitatingly.

Digitized by Google

For, my Porcia, there is not a woman,
Say what she will, and virtuous as you please,
Who, being lov'd, resents it: and could he
Who most his mistress's disfavour mourns
Look deeply down enough into her heart,
He 'd see, however high she carries it,
Some grateful recognition lurking there
Under the muffle of affected scorn.
You know how I repell'd your brother's suit:
How ever when he wrote to me I tore
His letters — would not listen when he spoke —
And when, relying on my love for you,
Through you he tried to whisper his for me,
I quarrell'd with yourself — quarrell'd the more
The more you spoke for him. He wept — I laugh'd;
Knelt in my path — I turn'd another way;
Though who had seen deep down into my heart,
Had also seen love struggling hard with pride.
Enough — at last one evening as I sat
Beside a window looking on the sea,
Wrapt in the gathering night he stole unseen
Beside me. After whispering all those vows
Of love which lovers use, and I pass by,
He press'd me to be his. Touch'd by the hour,
The mask of scorn fell from my heart, and Love
Reveal'd himself, and from that very time
Grew unconceal'd between us — yet, Porcia,

Digitized by Google

Upon mine honour, (for I tell thee *all,*)
Always in honour bounded. At that time
In an ill hour my father plann'd a marriage
Between me and Don Juan — yours, you know,
Came here to Naples, whence he sent your brother,
I know not on what business, into Spain;
And we agreed, I mean Alvaro and I,
Rather than vex two fathers at one time
By any declaration of our vows,
'T were best to keep them secret — at the least,
Till his return from Spain. Ah, Porcia,
When yet did love not thrive by secrecy?
We parted — he relying on my promise,
I on his quick return. . Oh, mad are those
Who, knowing that a storm is up, will yet
Put out to sea. Alvaro went — my father
Urged on this marriage with my cousin. Oh! —

Por. You are ill, Serafina!

Ser. Nothing — nothing —
I reason'd — wept — implor'd — excus'd — delay'd
In vain — O mercy, Heaven!

Por. Tell me no more:
It is too much for you.

Ser. Then suddenly
We heard that he was dead — your brother — drown'd —
They married me — and now perhaps he lives.
They say — Porcia, can it be? — I know not

Digitized by Google

Whether to hope or dread if that be true;—
And every wind that blows your father hope
Makes my blood cold; I know that I shall meet him,
Here or upon the seas—dead or alive—
Methinks I see him now!—Help! help! [*Swoons.*

Por. Serafina!
She has fainted!—Julia! Flora!—

Enter ALVARO.

Alv. My Porcia!

Por. Alvaro! *(They embrace.)* [ment

Alv. I have outrun the shower of compli-
On my escapes—which you shall hear anon—
To catch you to my heart.

Por. Oh joy and terror!
Look there!—

Alv. Serafina!
And sleeping too!

Por. Oh, swooning! see to her
Till I get help. [*Exit.*

Ser. (in her swoon). Mercy, mercy!
Alvaro, slay me not!—I am not guilty!—
Indeed I am not!— [strangely—

Alv. She dreams—and dreams of me—but very
Serafina!—

Ser. (waking). Dead!—or return'd alive to curse
and slay me!—

Digitized by Google

But I am innocent! — I could not help —
They told me you were dead — and are you not? —
And I must marry him —

Alv. Must marry? — whom? —
Why you are dreaming still —
Awake! — 't is your Alvaro — *(Offers to embrace her.)*

Ser. No, no, no —
I dare not —

Alv. Dare not!

Enter PORCIA, FLORA, JULIA.

Por. Quick, quick!

Flora. My lady!

Julia. My lord alive again!

Alv. Porcia, come hither — I am not alive,
Till I have heard the truth — nay, if 't be true
That she has hinted and my heart forebodes,
I shall be worse than dead —

[*Retires with* PORCIA *to back of Stage.*

Enter JUAN *and* PEDRO.

Juan. What is the matter?
My Serafina!

Pedro. We have hurried back,
Told of your sudden seizure — What is it?

Ser. The very heart within me turn'd to ice.

Juan. But you are better now? —

Digitized by Google

Ser. Yes — better — pray,
Be not uneasy for me.

Alv. (to PORCIA *in the rear).* This is true then!

Por. Nay, nay, be not so desperate, Alvaro,
Hearing but half the story — no fault of hers —
I 'll tell you all anon. Come, Serafina,
I 'll see you to your chamber.

Pedro. She will be better soon —

Juan. Lean upon me, my love — so — so.

Alv. Oh, fury!

Ser. Oh, would to heaven these steps should be my last,
Leading not to my chamber, but my grave!

Por. (to ALVARO). Wait here — compose yourself — I shall be back
Directly. [*Exeunt* PORCIA, SERAFINA, *and* JUAN.

Alv. She is married — broke her troth —
And I escape from death and slavery
To find her — but the prince! — Oh weariness!

Enter the PRINCE ORSINO, CELIO, DON LUIS, *and Train.*

Prince. Each day, Don Luis, I become your debtor
For some new courtesy.

Luis. My lord, 't is I
Who by such small instalments of my duty
Strive to pay back in part the many favours

Digitized by Google

You shower upon your servant. And this last,
Of bringing back Alvaro to my arms,
Not all my life, nor life itself, could pay.

Prince. Small thanks to me, Don Luis; but indeed
The strangest chance — two chances — two escapes —
First from the sinking ship upon a spar,
Then from the Algerine who pick'd him up,
Carried him captive off —
He first adroitly through their fingers slipping
That little harbinger of hope to you,
And then, at last, himself escaping back
To Barcelona, where you know I was —
If glad to welcome, house, and entertain
Any distrest Italian, how much more,
Both for his own sake and for yours, your son,
So making him, I trust, a friend for life.

Alv. Rather a humble follower, my lord.

Luis. I have no words to thank you — we shall hear
The whole tale from Alvaro by and by —
To make us merry — once so sad to him.
Meanwhile, Alvaro, thou hast seen thy sister?

Alv. Yes, sir —

Luis. Oh what a joy 't is to see thee!

Prince. A day of general joy.

Alv. (aside). Indeed! —

Prince. Especially
To her, Alvaro —

Digitized by Google

Alv. Sir?

Prince. I mean your sister.

Alv. Yes, my lord — no — I am not sure, my lord —
A friend of hers is suddenly so ill,
My sister is uneasy —

Luis. Serafina!
Indeed! — I know your Highness will forgive
My seeing to her straight. [*Exit.*

Alv. And I, my lord,
Would fain see some old faces once again
As soon as may be.

Prince. Nay, no more excuse —
Follow your pleasure.

Alv. (aside). 'T is no friend I seek,
But my one deadliest enemy — myself. [*Exit.*

Prince. Celio, I think we have well nigh exhausted
The world of compliment, and wasted it:
For I begin to doubt that word and deed
Are wasted all in vain.

Celio. How so, my lord?

Prince. Why, if I never am to see Porcia
Whom I have come so far and fast to see —

Cel. Never, my lord! her father's guest is ill,
And she for a few minutes —

Prince. *Minutes*, Celio!
Knowest thou not minutes are years to lovers?

Cel. I know that lovers are strange animals.

Digitized by Google

Prince. Ah, you have never loved.
Cel. No, good my lord,
I 'm but a looker-on ; or in the market
Just give and take the current coin of love —
Love her that loves me ; and, if she forget,
Forget her too.
Prince. Ah, then I cannot wonder
You wonder so at my impatience ;
For he that cannot love, can be no judge
Of him that does.
Cel. How so ?
Prince. I 'll tell thee, Celio.
He who far off beholds another dancing,
Even one who dances best, and all the time
Hears not the music that he dances to,
Thinks him a madman, apprehending not
The law that rules his else eccentric action.
So he that 's in himself insensible
Of love's sweet influence, misjudges him
Who moves according to love's melody ;
And knowing not that all these sighs and tears,
Ejaculations, and impatiences,
Are necessary changes of a measure,
Which the divine musician plays, may call
The lover crazy ; which he would not do
Did he within his own heart hear the tune
Play'd by the great musician of the world.

Digitized by Google

Cel. Well, I might answer, that, far off or near,
Hearing or not the melody you tell of,
The man is mad who dances to it. But
Here is your music.

Enter PORCIA.

Porcia. I left my brother here but now.
Prince. But now,
Sweet Porcia, you see he is not here —
By that so seeming earnest search for him
Scarce recognising me, if you would hint
At any seeming slight of mine toward you,
I plead not guilty —
Por. You mistake, my lord —
Did I believe my recognition
Of any moment to your Excellency,
I might perhaps evince it in complaint,
But not in slight.
Prince. Complaint! —
Por. Yes, sir — complaint.
Prince. Complaint of what? I knowing, Porcia,
And you too knowing well, the constant love
That I have borne you since the happy day
When first we met in Naples —
Por. No, my lord —
You mean my love to you, not yours to me —
Unwearied through your long forgetful absence.

Digitized by Google

Prince. How easily, Porcia, would my love
Prove to you its unchanged integrity,
Were it not that our friends —
Por. Your friends indeed,
Who stop a lame apology at the outset.

Enter SERAFINA.

Serafina. I cannot rest, Porcia, and am come
To seek it in your arms — but who is this?
Por. The Prince Orsino.
Ser. Pardon me, my lord —
I knew you not — coming so hurriedly,
And in much perturbation.
Prince. Nay, lady,
I owe you thanks for an embarrassment
Which hides my own.
Ser. Let it excuse beside
What other courtesies I owe your Highness,
But scarce have words to pay. Heaven guard your Highness —
Suffer me to retire. [*Exit.*
Por. I needs must after her, my lord. But tell me,
When shall I hear your vindication?
To-night?
Prince. Ay, my Porcia, if you will.
Por. Till night farewell, then. [*Exit.*
Prince. Farewell. — Celio,

Digitized by Google

Didst ever see so fair an apparition,
As her who came and went so suddenly?

Cel. Indeed, so sweetly mannered when surprised,
She must be exquisite in her composure.

Prince. Who is she?

Cel. Nay, my lord, just come with you,
I know as little —
What! a new tune to dance to?—

Prince. In good time,
Here comes Alvaro.

Enter ALVARO.

Alvaro. How restless is the sickness of the soul!
I scarce had got me from this fatal place,
And back again —

Prince. Alvaro!

Alv. My lord —

Prince. Who is the lady that was here anon?

Alv. Lady, my lord — what lady? —

Prince. She that went
A moment hence — I mean your sister's guest.

Alv. (This drop was wanting!)
My lord, the daughter of a nobleman
Of very ancient blood —
Don Pedro Castellano.

Prince. And her name?

Alv. Serafina.

Digitized by Google

Prince. And a most seraphic lady!

Alv. You never saw her, sir, before?

Prince. No, surely.

Alv. (aside.) Would I had never done so!

Prince. And in the hasty glimpse I had,
I guess her mistress of as fair a mind
As face.

Alv. Yes, sir —

Prince. She lives in Naples, eh?

Alv. No — on her way
To Spain, I think —

Prince. Indeed! —To Spain. Why that?

Alv. (How much more will he ask?)
My lord, her husband —

Prince. She is married then? —

Alv. Torture! [Alvaro?

Prince. And who so blest to call her his,

Alv. Sir, Don Juan Roca, her cousin.

Prince. Roca? Don Juan Roca? Do I know him?

Alv. I think you must; he came, sir, with my father
To wait upon your Grace.

Prince. Don Juan Roca!
No; I do not remember him — should not
Know him again.

Enter DON LUIS.

Luis. My lord, if my old love

Digitized by Google

And service for your Highness may deserve
A favour at your hands —
Prince. They only wait
Until your tongue has named it.
Luis. This it is then —
The captain of the galleys, good my lord,
In which your Highness came,
Tells me that, having landed you, he lies
Under strict orders to return again
Within an hour.
Prince. 'T is true.
Luis. Now, good my lord,
The ships, when they go back, must carry with them
Some friends who, long time look'd for, just are come,
And whom I fain —
Prince. Nay, utter not a wish
I know I must unwillingly deny.
Alv. Confusion on confusion!
Prince. I have pledg'd
My word to Don Garcia of Toledo,
The galleys should not pass an hour at Naples.
I feel for you, — and for myself, alas!
So sweet a freight they carry with them. But
I dare not — and what folly to adore
A Beauty lost to me before I found it!

[*Exeunt* PRINCE *and* CELIO.

Digitized by Google

Luis. And those I so had long'd for, to avenge
Their long estrangement by as long a welcome,
Snatcht from me almost ere we 'd shaken hands! —
Is not this ill, Alvaro? —

Alv. Ill indeed.

Luis. And, as they needs must go, my hospitality,
Foil'd in its spring, must turn to wound myself
By speeding their departure. *(Going.)*

Alv. Sir, a moment.
Although his Highness would not, or could not,
Grant you the boon your services deserv'd,
Let not that, I beseech you, indispose you
From granting one to me.

Luis. What is 't, Alvaro?
'T were strange could I refuse you anything.

Alv. You sent me, sir, on state affairs to Spain,
But being wreckt and captur'd, as you know,
All went undone.
Another opportunity now offers;
The ships are ready, let me go and do
That which perforce I left undone before.

Luis. What else could'st thou have askt,
In all the category of my means,
Which I, methinks, had grudg'd thee! No, Alvaro,
The treacherous sea must not again be trusted
With the dear promise of my only son.

Alv. Nay, for that very reason, I entreat you

Digitized by Google

To let me go, sir. Let it not be thought
The blood that I inherited of you
Quail'd at a common danger.
Luis. I admire
Your resolution, but you must not go,
At least not now.
Beside, the business you were sent upon
Is done by other hands, or let go by
For ever.
Alv. Nay, sir —
Luis. Nay, Alvaro. [*Exit.*
Alv. He is resolved. And Serafina,
To whose divinity I offered up
My heart of hearts, a purer sacrifice
Than ever yet on pagan altar blaz'd,
Has play'd me false, is married to another,
And now will fly away on winds and seas,
As fleeting as herself.
Then what remains but that I die? My death
The necessary shadow of that marriage!
Comfort! — what boots it looking after that
Which never can be found? The worst is come,
Which 't were a blind and childish waste of hope
To front with any visage but despair,
Ev'n that one single solace, were there one,
Of ringing my despair into her ears,
Fails me. Time presses; the accursed breeze

Digitized by Google

Blows foully fair. The vessel flaps her sails
That is to bear her from me. Look, she comes —
And from before her dawning beauty all
I had to say fades from my swimming brain,
And chokes upon my tongue.

Enter SERAFINA, *drest as at first, and* PORCIA.

Porcia. And must we part so quickly? —
Serafina. When does happiness
Last longer?
Alv. Never! — who best can answer that?
I standing by, why ask it of another?
At least when speaking of such happiness
As, perjur'd woman, thy false presence brings!
Ser. Alvaro, for Heaven's sake spare me the pang
Of these unjust reproaches.
Alv. What! unjust!
Ser. Why, is it not unjust, condemning one
Without defence?
Alv. Without defence indeed!
Ser. Not that I have not a most just defence,
But that you will not listen.
Alv. Serafina,
I listen'd; but what wholly satisfies
The criminal may ill suffice the judge;
And in love's court especially, a word
Has quite a different meaning to the soul

Digitized by Google

Of speaker and of hearer. Yet once more,
Speak.

Ser. To what purpose? I can but repeat
What I have told your sister, and she you,—
What on the sudden waking from my swoon,
I, who had thought you dead so long, Alvaro,
Spoke in my terror, suddenly seeing you
Alive, before me.

Alv. I were better, then,
Dead than alive?

Ser. I know not — were you dead
I might in honour weep for you, Alvaro;
Living, I must not.

Alv. Nay then, whether you
Forswear me living or lament me dead,
Now you must hear me; if you strike the wound,
Is it not just that you should hear the cry?

Ser. I must not.

Alv. But I say you must.

Ser. Porcia,
Will you not help me when my life and honour
Are thus at stake?

Alv. Porcia's duty lies
In keeping watch that no one interrupt us.

Porcia. Between the two confus'd, I yield at last
To him, both as my brother, Serafina,
And for his love to you. Compose yourself;

Digitized by Google

I shall be close at hand, no harm can happen.
And let him weep at least who has lost all. [*Exit.*

Ser. If I am forc'd to hear you then, Alvaro,
You shall hear me too, once more, one for all,
Freely confessing that I loved you once;
Ay, long and truly loved you. When all hope
Of being yours with your reported death
Had died, then, yielding to my father's wish,
I wed another, and am — what I am.
So help me Heaven, Alvaro, this is all!

Alv. How can I answer if you weep?

Ser. No, no,
I do not weep, or, if I do, 't is but
My eyes,— no more, no deeper.

Alv. Is 't possible you can so readily
Turn warm compassion into cold disdain!
And are your better pulses so controll'd
By a cold heart, that, to enhance the triumph
Over the wretched victim of your eyes,
You make the fount of tears to stop or flow
Just as you please? If so, teach me the trick,
As the last courtesy you will vouchsafe me.

Ser. Alvaro, when I think of what I was,
My tears will forth; but when of what I am,
My honour bids them cease.

Alv. You *do* feel then —

Ser. Nay, I 'll deny it not.

Digitized by Google

Alv. That, being another's —
Ser. Nay, no argument —
Alv. These tears —
Ser. What tears?
Alv. Are the relenting rain
On which the Iris of my hope may ride;
Or a sweet dew —
Ser. Alvaro —
Alv. That foretells
That better day when in these arms again —
Ser. Those arms! Alvaro, when that day shall come
May heaven's thunder —!
(Cannon within.)
Mercy, what 's that?

Enter PORCIA.

Por. A signal from the ship,
'T is time: your father and Don Juan now
Are coming for you.
Alv. O heavens!
Por. Compose yourself,
And you, Alvaro — *(Motions him back.)*

Enter DON JUAN, LUIS, PEDRO, LEONELO, &c.

Luis. Lady, believe how sadly I am come
To do you this last office.
Juan. Trembling still? —
But come, perhaps the sea-breeze, in requital

Digitized by Google

Of bearing us away from those we love,
May yet revive you.
Luis. Well, if it must be so,
Lady, your hand. Porcia, come with us.
[*Exeunt all but* ALVARO.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A room in* DON JUAN'S *house at Barcelona: he is discovered painting* SERAFINA. *It gradually grows dusk.*

Juan. ARE you not wearied sitting?
Serafina. Surely not
Till you be wearied painting.
Juan. Oh, so much
As I have wish'd to have that divine face
Painted, and by myself, I now begin
To wish I had not wish'd it.
Ser. But why so?
Juan. Because I must be worsted in the trial
I have brought on myself.
Ser. You to despair,
Who never are outdone but by yourself!

Digitized by Google

Juan. Even so.

Ser. But *why* so?

Juan. Shall I tell you why?
Painters, you know, (just turn your head a little,)
Are nature's apes, whose uglier semblances,
Made up of disproportion and excess,
Like apes, they easily can imitate:
But whose more gracious aspect, the result
Of subtlest symmetries, they only outrage,
Turning true beauty into caricature.
The perfecter her beauty, the more complex
And hard to follow; but her perfection
Impossible.

Ser. That I dare say is true,
But surely not in point with me, whose face
Is surely far from perfect.

Juan. Far indeed
From what is perfect call'd, but far beyond,
Not short of it; so that indeed my reason
Was none at all.

Ser. Well now then the true reason
Of your disgust.

Juan. Yet scarcely my disgust,
When you continue still the cause of it.
Well then, to take the matter up again —
The object of this act, (pray, look at me,
And do not laugh, Serafina,) is to seize

Digitized by Google

Those subtlest symmetries that, as I said,
Are subtlest in the loveliest; and though
It has been half the study of my life
To recognise and represent true beauty,
I had not dreamt of such excess of it
As yours; nor can I, when before my eyes,
Glass the clear image in my trembling soul;
And therefore if that face of yours exceed
Imagination, and imagination
(As it must do) the pencil; then my picture
Can be but the poor shadow of a shade.
Besides,—

Ser. Can there be anything besides?

Juan. 'T is said that fire and light, and air and snow,
Cannot be painted; how much less a face
Where they are so distinct, yet so compounded,
As needs must drive the artist to despair!
I 'll give it up.—*(Throws away his brushes, &c.)*
The light begins to fail too.
And, Serafina, pray remember this,
If, tempted ever by your loveliness,
And fresh presumption that forgets defeat,
I 'd have you sit again, allow me not,—
It does but vex me.

Ser. Nay, if it do that
I will not, Juan, or let me die for it,—
Come, there 's an oath upon 't.

Digitized by Google

Juan. A proper curse
On that rebellious face.

Enter LEONELO.

Leonelo. And here comes in a story:—
A man got suddenly deaf, and seeing the people about him moving their lips, quoth he, "What the devil makes you all dumb?" never thinking for a moment the fault might be in himself. So it is with you, who lay the blame on a face that all the world is praising, and not on your own want of skill to paint it.

Juan. Not a very apt illustration, Leonelo, as you would admit if you heard what I was saying before you came in. But, whose soever the fault, I am the sufferer. I will no more of it, however. Come, I will abroad.

Ser. Whither, my lord?

Juan. Down to the pier, with the sea and the fresh air, to dispel my vexation.

Ser. By quitting me?

Juan. I might indeed say so, since the sight of you is the perpetual trophy of my defeat. But what if I leave you in order to return with a double zest?

Ser. Nay, nay, with no such pretty speeches hope to delude me; I know what it is. The carnival with its fair masks.

Juan. A mask abroad when I have that face at home!

Digitized by Google

Ser. Nay, nay, I know you.

Juan. Better than I do myself?

Ser. What wife does not?

Leon. Just so. A German and the priest of his village coming to high words one day, because the man blew his swine's horn under the priest's window, the priest calls out in a rage, "I 'll denounce your horns to the parish, I will!" which the man's wife overhearing in the scullery, she cries out, "Halloa, neighbour, here is the priest revealing my confession!"

Ser. What impertinence, Leonelo.

Leon. Very well then, listen to this: a certain man in Barcelona had five or six children, and one day —

Juan. Peace, foolish fellow.

Leon. Those poor children will never get the meat well into their mouths.

Juan. Farewell, my love, awhile.

[*Exeunt* JUAN *and* LEONELO.

Ser. Farewell, my lord.
Thou little wicked Cupid,
I am amused to find how by degrees
The wound your arrows in my bosom made,
And made to run so fast with tears, is healing.
Yea, how those very arrows and the bow
That did such mischief, being snapt asunder —
Thyself art tamed to a good household child.

Digitized by Google

Enter FLORA, *out of breath.*

Flora. O madam!

Ser. Well, Flora, what now?

Flora. O madam, there is a man down-stairs!

Ser. Well?

Flora. Drest sailor-like.

Ser. Well?

Flora. He will not go away unless I give this letter into your hands.

Ser. Into my hands? from whom?

Flora. From the lady Porcia he says, madam.

Ser. From Porcia, well, and what frightens you?

Flora. Nothing, madam, and yet —

Ser. And yet there is something.

Flora. O my lady, if this should be Don Alvaro!

Ser. Don Alvaro! what makes you think that?

Flora. I am sure it is he.

Ser. But did you tell him you knew him?

Flora. I could not help, madam, in my surprise.

Ser. And what said he then?

Flora. That I must tell you he was here.

Ser. Alvaro!—
Flora, go back, tell him you dared not tell me,
Fearful of my rebuke, and say beside,
As of your own advice, that it is fit,
Both for himself and me,
That he depart immediately.

Digitized by Google

Flora. Yes, madam.

As she is going, enter ALVARO, *as a Sailor.*

Alv. No need. Seeing Don Juan leave his house,
I have made bold to enter, and have heard
What Flora need not to repeat.
Ser. Nay, sir,
Rather it seems as if you had not heard;
Seeing the most emphatic part of all
Forbad your entrance.
Alv. So might it seem perhaps,
Inexorable beauty: but you know
How one delinquency another breeds;
And having come so far, and thus disguised,
Only to worship at your shrine, Serafina,
(I dare not talk of love,) I do beseech you
Do not so frown at my temerity,
As to reject the homage that it brings.
Ser. Don Alvaro,
If thus far I have listen'd, think it not
Warrant of further importunity.
I could not help it — 't is with dread and terror
That I have heard thus much; I now beseech you,
Since you profess you came to honour me,
Show that you did so truly by an act
That shall become your honour well as mine.
Alv. Speak, Serafina.

Digitized by Google

Ser. Leave me so at once,
And without further importunity,
That I may be assured *you* are assured
That lapse of time, my duty as a wife,
My husband's love for me, and mine for him,
My station and my name, all have so changed me,
That winds and waves might sooner overturn
Not the oak only,
But the eternal rock on which it grows,
Than you my heart, though sea and sky themselves
Join'd in the tempest of your sighs and tears.

Alv. But what if I remember other times
When Serafina was no stubborn oak,
Resisting wind and wave, but a fair flower
That open'd to the sun of early love,
And follow'd him along the golden day:
No barren heartless rock,
But a fair temple in whose sanctuary
Love was the idol, daily and nightly fed
With sacrifice of one whole human heart.

Ser. I do not say 't was not so;
But, sir, to carry back the metaphor
Your ingenuity has turn'd against me,
That tender flower, transplanted it may be
To other skies and soil, might in good time
Strike down such roots and strengthen such a stem
As were not to be shook: the temple, too,

Digitized by Google

Though seeming slight to look on, being yet
Of nature's fundamental marble built,
When once that foolish idol was dethroned,
And the true God set up into his place,
Might stand unscathed in sanctity and worship,
For ages and for ages.

Alv. Serafina,
Why talk to me of ages, when the account
Of my misfortune and your cruelty
Measures itself by hours, and not by years!
It was but yesterday you loved me, yes,
Loved me, and (let the metaphor run on)
I never will believe it ever was,
Or is, or ever can be possible
That the fair flower so soon forgot the sun
To which so long she owed and turn'd her beauty,
To love the baser mould in which she grew:
Or that the temple could so soon renounce
Her old god, true god too while he was there,
For any cold and sober deity
Which you may venerate, but cannot love,
Newly set up.

Ser. I must leave metaphor,
And take to sober sense; nor is it right,
Alvaro, that you strive
To choke the virtuous present with the past,
Which, when it was the past, was virtuous too,

Digitized by Google

But would be guilty if reiterate.
Nor is it right, nor courteous, certainly,
Doubting what I declare of my own heart;
Nay, you who do yourself affirm, Alvaro,
How well I loved you when such love was lawful,
Are bound to credit me when I declare
That love is now another's.

Alv. Serafina —

Juan (speaking within). Light, light, there!

Enter FLORA *hurriedly.*

Flora. Madam, my lord, my lord.

Alv. Confusion!

Ser. O ye heavens!

Flora. The old lover's story,
Brother or husband sure to interrupt.

Juan (within). A light there, Flora! Serafina! night
Set in, and not a lamp lit in the house?

Alv. He comes.

Ser. And I am lost!

Flora. Quick, Don Alvaro,
Into this closet, till my lord be gone
Into his chamber; in, in, in!

Alv. My fears
Are all for you, not for myself. [*Hides in the closet.*

Flora. In, in!

Juan (entering). How is it there's no light?

Digitized by Google

Ser. She had forgot —
But here it comes.

Enter FLORA *with lights.*

'T was kind of you, my lord,
So quickly back again —
Sooner than I expected.
Juan. Yes, a friend
Caught hold of me just as I reach'd the pier,
And told me to get home again.
Ser. (aside). My heart!
Juan. And wherefore do you think?
Ser. Nay, I know not.
Juan. To tell you of a festival, Serafina,
Preparing in your honour.
Ser. (aside). I breathe again.
Juan. The story 's this. It is the carnival,
You know, and, by a very ancient usage,
To-morrow all the folk of Barcelona,
Highest as well as lowest, men and women,
Go abroad mask'd to dance and see the shows.
And you being newly come, they have devised
A dance and banquet for you, to be held
In Don Diego's palace, looking forth
So pleasantly (do you remember it?)
Upon the sea. And therefore for their sakes,
And mine, my Serafina, you must for once

Digitized by Google

Eclipse that fair face with the ugly mask;
I 'll find you fitting dress,— what say you?
Ser. Nay,
What should I say but that your will is mine,
In this as evermore?
And now you speak of dress, there are ev'n now
Some patterns brought me in the nick of time
To choose from, in my chamber; prithee come,
And help me judge.
Juan. I would that not your robe
Only, but all the ground on which you walk
Were laced with diamond.
Ser. What not done yet
With compliment? Come— come. *(She takes a light.)*
Juan. But wherefore this?
Ser. My duty is to wait upon you.
Juan. No.
Take the lamp, Flora.
Ser. Flora waits on me,
And I on you.
Juan. What humour 's this?
But be it as you will. [*Exeunt* JUAN *and* SERAFINA.
Flora (letting out ALVARO). Now is the time,
Signor Alvaro! hist!
The coast is clear, but silently and swiftly —
Follow — but, hush! stop! wait!
Alv. What now?

Digitized by Google

Flora. A moment!
Back, back, 't is Leonelo.

Alv. Put out the light, I can slip past him.

Flora (falls putting out light). No sooner said than done. O Lord, Lord, Lord.

Enter LEONELO.

Leon. What is the matter?

Flora. The matter is, I have fallen.

Leon. Into temptation?

Flora. It is well, sir, if I have not broken my leg; here, sir, cease your gibing, and get this lamp lighted directly.

Leon (stumbling over ALVARO). Halloa!

Flora. What now?

Leon. I 've fallen now, and on your temptation I think, for it has got a beard.

Alv. (groping his way). The fool! but I can find the door. [*Exit.*

Leon. There goes some one!

Flora. The man 's mad!

Leon. Am I! Halloa! halloa, there!

Enter JUAN *with light.*

Juan. What is the matter?

Flora. Nothing, nothing, my lord.

Leon. Nothing? I say it is something, a great—

Digitized by Google

Flora. My lord, going to shut the door, I stumbled, fell, and put out the light, that 's all.

Leon. And I stumbled too.

Juan. Well ?

Leon. Over a man.

Juan. In this chamber !

Leon. Yes, and —

Flora. Nonsense ! my lord, he stumbled against *me*, as we both floundered in the dark.

Leon. You ! What have you done with your beard then ?

Juan. Are you mad ? or is this some foolery ?

Leon. My lord, I swear I stumbled over a fellow here.

Juan (aside). And she so anxious to light me to her chamber ! What is all this ? Take the lamp, Leonelo. Though partly I think you have been dreaming, I will yet search the house ; come with me. I will draw the sting of suspicion at once, come what come may. [*Draws sword and exit.*

Flora (to LEON). All of your work. A murrain on your head,
Making this pother.

Leon. Minx ! what is said, is said.

[*Exeunt severally.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE II.—*The garden of* DON LUIS' *palace at Naples; a window with a balcony on one side, or in front:—night. Enter the* PRINCE *and* CELIO *muffled up.*

Celio. Still sighing? pardon me, your Highness, but
This melancholy is a riddle to me.
Prince. Ah, Celio, so strange a thing is love,
The sighs you think are melancholy sighs,
Yet are not so; I have indeed drunk poison,
But love the taste of it.
Cel. I used to think
'T was all of being away from your Porcia;
But now when better starr'd, her brother absent,
Her father unsuspicious, at her bidding
Night after night you come beneath her lattice,
And yet—
Prince. If Porcia be not the cause
Of my complaint she cannot be the cure:
Yet (such is love's pathology) she serves
To soothe the wound another made. [sake
Cel. Who then was she, my lord, for whose fair
You cannot either love this loving lady,
Nor leave her?
Prince. I would tell you, Celio,
But you would laugh at me.
Cel. Tell me, however.

Digitized by Google

Prince. Rememberest not the lady whom we saw
For a few minutes, like some lovely vision,
In this same house, a little while ago?
Not Porcia, but her diviner guest.

Cel. Oh, I remember; is it then to be
The specialty of your Highness' love,
That, whereas other men's dies off by absence,
Yours quickens — if it can be love at all
Caught from one transitory glance.

Prince. Nay, Celio;
Because a cloud may cover up the sun
At his first step into the firmament,
Are we to say he never rose at all?
Are we to say the lightning did not flash
Because it did but flash, or that the fountain
Never ran fresh because it ran so fast
Into its briny cradle and its grave?
My love, if 't were but of one moment born,
And but a moment living, yet was love;
And love it *is*, now living with my life. *(A harp heard.)*

Cel. O fine comparisons! but hark, I hear
The widow'd turtle in the leaves away
Calling her faithless mate.

Prince. Yes, Celio, 't is
Porcia — if she sings to me of *love*,
I am to approach the window; but if *jealousy*,
I am to keep aloof. Listen!

Digitized by Google

Porcia (singing within).

Of all the shafts to Cupid's bow,
The first is tipt with fire;
All bare their bosoms to the blow,
And call the wound Desire.

(She appears at the window.)

Prince. Ah! I was waiting, lovely Porcia,
Till your voice drew me by the notes of love,
Or distanc'd me by those of jealousy.

Por. Which needs not music, prince, to signify,
Being love's plain, prose history.

Prince. Not always;
For instance, I know one,
Who, to refute your theory, Porcia,
Attracts men by her jealousy as much
As she repels them by her love.

Por. Nay, then
Men must be stranger beings than I thought.

Prince. I know not how that is, I only know
That in love's empire, as in other empires,
Rebellion sometimes prospers.

Por. That the night
Would give us leave to argue out their point!
Which yet I fear it will not.

Prince. Why?

Por. My father,
Who frets about my brother's sudden absence,

Digitized by Google

Sits up enditing letters after him;
And therefore I have brought my harp, that while
We talk together I may touch the strings,
So as he, hearing me so occupied,
May not suspect or ask for me. Besides,
We can talk under cover of the music.

Prince. Not the first time that love has found himself
Fretted, Porcia.

Por. Oh, the wretched jest!
But listen —
The music is for him, the words for you,
For I have much to tell you underneath
This mask of music. *(Plays on the harp.)*
You know my father has been long resolv'd
To quit this government, and to return
To his own country place — which resolution,
First taken on my brother's suppos'd death,
My brother's sudden absence has revived;
And brought to a head — so much so, that to-morrow,
To-morrow, he has settled to depart
To Bellaflor — I scarce can say the words —
But let my tears —

Prince. 'T is well that you should mask
Ill news under sweet music: though, indeed,
A treason to make sweet the poison'd cup.

Por. Who more than I —

Digitized by Google

Enter JULIA *within, hurried.*

Julia. Madam, madam, your father
Is gone into the garden — I hear his steps.

Por. Nay then — *(Sings)*

Love's second is a poison'd dart,
And Jealousy is nam'd:
Which carries poison to the heart
Desire had first inflam'd.

Prince. She sings of jealousy — we must retire;
Hist, Celio! [CELIO *and* PRINCE *retreat.*

Enter LUIS.

Julia. Who 's there?

Por. Speak!

Luis. Oh, I, Porcia,
Who writing in my study, and much troubled
About your brother, was seduc'd away
By your harp's pleasant sound and the cool night,
To take a turn in the garden.

Por. Yes, sir, here
I sit, enjoying the cool air that blows
Up from the shore among the whispering leaves.

Luis. What better? but, Porcia, it grows late,
And chilly, I think: and though I 'd have you here
Singing like a nightingale the whole night through,
It must not be. Will you come in? [*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

Por. Directly —
I 've but a moment.
Prince (entering). And you shall not need
Repeat the love call, for I heard —
Por. (playing as she speaks). Nay, listen,
And that attentively. To-morrow, then,
We go to Bellaflor, (you know the place,) —
There in the hill-top, hid among the trees,
Is an old castle; ours, but scarcely us'd,
And kept by an old man who loves me well,
And can be secret. And if you should come
That way by chance, as hunting it may be,
I think we yet may meet.
Luis (within). Porcia!
Por. Sir! [window.
Luis (within). It 's time, indeed, to shut your
Por. Hark,
I dare no longer.
Prince. Then farewell!
Por. Farewell!
Remember Bellaflor: while you retreat
Among the trees, I still shall sing to you
Of love; not that dark shape of jealousy,
But in the weeds of absence.
Prince. A descant
That suits us both, — *(aside)*, but on a different
theme.

Digitized by Google

Por. (singing).

The last of Cupid's arrows all
With heavy lead is set;
That vainly weeping lovers call
Repentance or Regret.

[*As she retires still singing from the window within, the* PRINCE *and* CELIO *retire back into the garden.*

SCENE III. *A street before* DON DIEGO'S *house in Barcelona.— Enter* ALVARO *and* FABIO, *masked: other Masks pass across, and into* DIEGO'S *house.*

Alv. This is the place; here will I wait till she comes by. I know her dress, but I dared not follow her till myself disguised.

Fab. And no doubt, sir, you will find good opportunity of talking to her. 'T is the old and acknowledged usage of this season, that any one may accost any one so long as both are masked, and so neither supposed to know the other.

Alv. Oh, a brave usage, and a brave invention, that of the Carnival! One may accost whom one pleases, and whisper what one will, under the very ears of husband, father, or duenna!

Fab. So received a custom, that even among this hot-headed jealous people of Spain, no mortal quarrel has yet arisen on these occasions, though plenty to provoke it.

Digitized by Google

Alv. Look! the Masks are coming; I hear the music within. She must soon be here. Let us withdraw round this corner till she come. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *A garden leading down to the sea; on one side a Portico.—Masks singing and dancing; in the course of which enter and mix with them,* JUAN, SERAFINA, LEONELO, FLORA, *and afterwards* ALVARO; *all masked.*

CHORUS.

Tantara, tantara, come follow me all,
Carnival, Carnival, Carnivāl.
Follow me, follow me, nobody ask;
Crazy is Carnival under the mask.
Follow me, follow me, nobody knows;
Under the mask is under the rose.
Tantara, tantara, &c.

Juan. How like you all this uproar?

Ser. O quite well.

Juan (aside). And so should I,
Did not a shadow from that darken'd room
Trail after me. But why torment myself!

Leon. My lord, the dancers wait.

Juan (to the musicians). Pardon me. Strike up!

Voices. Strike up! strike up!

A Voice. The castanets!

Voices. The castanets! the castanets!

Musician. What will you have?

Digitized by Google

Voices. The Tarazana! the Tarazana!

[*A dance, during which* ALVARO *observes*

Fab. You recognise her? [SERAFINA.

Alv. Yes, Fabio, my heart
Would recognise her under any dress,
And under any mask.

Fab. Now is your time.

Alv. (*to* SERAFINA). Mask, will you dance with me?

Ser. No, Cavalier;
You come too late.

Alv. Too late?

Ser. I am engag'd.

Alv. Nevertheless —

Ser. Nay, sir, I am not apt
To change my mind.

Alv. I hop'd that in my favour
You might perhaps.

Ser. 'T was a delusion.

Alv. But,
Fair Mask, didst never change your mind before?

Ser. Perhaps once — to such purpose that that *once*
Forbids all other.

Juan. Serafina, the Mask
Has askt your hand to dance. On these occasions
You must permit him, whether known or not.
Unknown, the usage of the time allows;
If known, 't were more discourteous to refuse.

Digitized by Google

Ser. My lord, 't was chiefly upon your account
That I refus'd to dance with him ; if you
Desire it, I am ready.

Juan. How, my love,
On my account ?

Ser. Liking your company
Much better.

Juan. Nay, take the humour of the time,
And dance with him. *(Aside.)* I marvel who it is
That follows Serafina, and to whom,
The very indisposition that she shows,
Argues a kind of secret inclination.

Alv. Well, do you still reject me ? —

Ser. I am bidden
To dance with you ; what measure will you call ?

Alv. Play " Love lies bleeding ! "

Ser. And why that ? —

Alv. Because
The spirit of the tune and of the words
Moves with my heart, and gives me leave beside
Amid its soft and slow divisions
To gaze on you and whisper in your ear.

[*A minuet by the Masks : during which* ALVARO *constantly whispers* SERAFINA, *who seems distrest ; after some time, they return in the figure to the front of the Stage.*]

Digitized by Google

Ser. I've heard enough, sir; save for courtesy,
Too much. No more.
Alv. Brief as the happiness
That once was mine! But —
Ser. Stay, sir, I will hear
No more. I had not danc'd with you at all,
But that I wish'd to tell you once for all
How hopeless is your passion — the great danger
Your coming hither put and puts me to,
And that not my honour only, but my life,
Depends upon your quitting me at once,
Now and for ever.
Alv. Serafina!
Ser. (aloud). I am tired!
Pardon me, friends, I cannot dance.
Juan. My love,
What is 't? Unwell?
Ser. I know not.
A Woman. Stop the ball!
Another. All in her honour too!
Another. What is the matter?
Juan. You are but tir'd with dancing.
Ser. No, no, no,
Let us go home.
Juan. Pardon us, friends,
Continue you your revels; we will go
Into the house awhile, and rest; I think

Digitized by Google

The heat and dancing have distrest her much,
But she 'll be better. To your dance again.
Come, Serafina. *(Aside.)* Leonelo! hither!
Find out the Mask that with your lady danc'd.

Leon. I 'll watch him to the world's end — or
If need be. [beyond,

Juan. Good — Come, Serafina.

[*Exeunt* JUAN *and* SERAFINA.

Alv. So end my hopes for ever. Fool! who seeking
For what once lost could never more be found,
Like to a child after a rainbow running —
Leaving my father, who had only just
Recover'd me to his old heart again,
Without adieu — equipp'd this Brigantine
(Down to the bottom may she go with me!)
In chase of this — not Serafina —no —
But this false Siren,
Who draws me with the music of her beauty,
To leave me in destruction.

Leon. (watching him). This must be some monk, who knows of some better entertainment elsewhere.

Alv. And after all,
Not one kind word of welcome or of thanks,
But that her life depended on my leaving her,
Who would for her have sacrificed my own
In any way but that. But it is done!
Henceforward I renounce all hope; henceforth —

Digitized by Google

And why not all despair? — the world is wide,
Eh, Fabio? and the good old saw says well
That fortune at the worst must surely mend.
Let us to sea, the ship is ready; come,
Away with all this foolery. *(Throws off mask, &c.)*

Leon. Here is a harlequin sailor!

Fabio. Well resolv'd.

Alv. Wear them what other fool may list,
I 'll straight aboard, and if the wind and sea
Can rise as they were wont, I 'll stretch all sail
Toward the perdition she consigns me to.
Halloa there! *(Whistles.)*

Enter SAILORS.

Sail. Captain?

Alv. How is 't for a cruise?

Sail. Oh, never better; just a breeze to keep
The ship from looking in her glass too long.

Alv. Aboard, aboard then! Farewell all my hopes;
My love, farewell for ever!

Voices (within). Fire! fire! fire!

All. What 's this?

Voices. Fire! fire! in Don Diego's palace!
Help! help!

Alv. She there! my life shall save the life
She said it jeopardied.

Digitized by Google

As he is going out, enter JUAN *with* SERAFINA *fainted in his arms.*

Juan. Friends! Gentlemen! if you would help in this calamity, take charge for a moment of this most precious thing of all, till I return.

Alv. (taking SERAFINA *in his arms).* Trust me, sir.

[JUAN *rushes off.*

Leon. Stop, my lord, stop a moment — he is gone, and this man —

Alv. Serafina in my arms! my ship at hand!
O love, O destiny! — aboard, aboard —
O 't is the merriest proverb of them all,
How one man rises by his neighbour's fall.

[*Exit, carrying off* SERAFINA.

Leon. Halloa! stop him! stop him! it is my mistress; Don Juan! my lord! my lord! the rascal has carried her off! my lord! my lord!

[*Runs after* ALVARO.

1*st Voice in the crowd.* The fire is getting under.

2*nd Voice.* No lives lost?

3*rd Voice.* Only, they say, one poor girl of the lady Serafina's.

Enter DON JUAN *hurriedly.*

Juan. I thought I heard Leonelo calling me — But where is Serafina? This is the place — yes — Serafina! I left them here — taken her perhaps fainting

Digitized by Google

as she was for help. Gentlemen, have you seen any here with a lady, fainted, in their charge — a sailor, I think?

1st Man. Not I, sir.

2nd Man. Nor I.

3rd Man. Stay. I think there were some sailors with a lady in their arms.

Juan. And where —

Enter LEONELO *breathless.*

Leon. Oh, my lord, my lord!

Juan. Speak!

Leon. The Mask who danced with my lady —

Juan. Where is she?

Leon. Was the sailor you gave her in charge to — He has carried her off.

Juan. The Mask! the sailor!

Leon. I saw him throw off his disguise, and now he has carried her off — to the shore — to sea — to the ship there now spreading her sails in the harbour.

Juan. Man! beware lest I blast thee!

Leon. As if I were the sailor! I tell you I ran after them, shouted, struggled, but was pushed aside, knocked down —

Juan. To the shore, to the shore! follow me!

Voices. What is the matter?

Juan. What I dare not name till it be avenged; Pirate! — Ruffian! Oh fool, I might have guessed —

Digitized by Google

but I will find them through water and fire too. To the shore!

[*Exit* JUAN, LEONELO *after him; confusion, &c.*

ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Room in* DON LUIS' *country-house near Naples.*

Enter DON LUIS *reading a letter.*

Luis. "You bid me tell you why it is Don Juan Roca has not written to you so long: and though it be pain to do so, I dare no longer defer answering you. At a carnival dance here, the palace of Don Diego de Cordona, in which the festival was held, took fire so suddenly, as people had much ado to escape with their lives. Don Juan's wife fainting from terror, he carried her out, and gave her in charge to a sailor standing near, while he himself returned to help at the fire. No doubt this sailor was a pirate: for he carried her off to his ship and set sail immediately. Don Juan returning and finding her gone rushes madly after; casts himself into the sea in his rage and desperation; is rescued half drowned, and taken to his house, from

Digitized by Google

which he was missed — he and his servant Leonelo — some days ago, taking scarce any thing with him, and leaving no hint of whither he is gone. And since that hour we have heard nothing of him, or of Serafina."

My heart prevents my eyes from reading more.
O heavens! to what chance and danger is
The fortune of the happiest, and still more,
The honour of the noblest, liable!
Ill fortune we may bear, and, if we choose,
Sit folded in despair with dignity;
But honour needs must wince before a straw,
And never rest until it be avenged.
To know where Juan is, and by his side
To put myself, and run all risk with him
Till he were righted, and the offender too,
I 'd give my life and all I 'm worth; no corner
In the wide earth but we would ferret it,
Until — Porcia!

Enter PORCIA.

Por. Pray, sir, pardon me,
But I would know what vexes you, you stand
Angrily talking to yourself alone:
This letter in your hand —What is it, sir?

Luis. Nothing, nothing, Porcia; (for Juan's sake
I must dissemble) — Nay, I have received
A letter upon business that annoys me.

Digitized by Google

Por. I 'm sorry, sir, for that, for I had come
To ask a favour of you.

Luis. Well, why not?

Por. They say that those who ask unseasonably
Must be content with a refusal.

Luis. Nay,
Between us two no season 's out of season.

Por. So? then I 'll ask. Alvaro —

Luis. All but that!
Ask me not that way.

Por. Then 't is *not* the season.

Luis. The season for all else but that which never
Can be in season. How often have I told you
Never to speak to me again of him!

Por. What has my brother done, sir, after all,
To make you so inveterate?

Luis. What done!
To leave my house, to which I only just
Had welcom'd him as only a father can,
Without adieu, or word of when or where,
And then as suddenly come back, forsooth,
Knock at my door, as if he had but made
A morning call, and think to find it open —
It and my heart — open to him as ever.

Por. But may not, sir, the thoughtlessness of youth
Be some excuse? Pray you remember, sir,
How on a sudden you yourself determin'd

Digitized by Google

To leave the cheerful city and come here,
Among dull woods and fields, and savage people;
And surely 't was no wonder that my brother
Should, ill advis'd, no doubt, but naturally,
Slip for a month back to the busy world
To which his very dangers had endear'd him.
And now to prove
How much he feels your anger and his fault,
Since his return he has lived quietly,
I might say almost *eremitically*,
Up in the mountain, yet more solitary
And still than this is, doing penance there.
Let me plead for him, sir; let him come down,
To kiss your hand and see you once again.

Luis. He should be grateful to you, Porcia —
Well, let him come.

Por. Bless you for saying so!
I 'll go myself to him this evening,
And tell him this good news.

Luis. Do so. Ah me!
That all were settled thus! Did I but know
Where Juan is, and where his enemy! [*Exit.*

Julia (entering). Well, madam, you have gain'd your point.

Por. Yes, Julia,
Two points; for, first, my brother will come back;
And, secondly, so doing, leave the old castle

Digitized by Google

At my disposal, where the Prince and I
May meet together in security.
I 'll write to Alvaro now, and do you tell
The messenger who brought his letter hither,
I 'll go this evening up the mountain. So
Belardo, the old porter,
Who knows and loves me well, will look for me,
And understand the purpose of my going.

Julia. Ah, now I see, beside his bow and arrows,
Love arms himself with trick and stratagem.

Por. And something else ; give me my arquebuss ;
So, Love and I perchance, as says the song,
May hit a hart, as we shall go along.

SCENE II. *A room in* DON LUIS' *castle in the hills.—*
Enter ALVARO *and* FABIO.

Alv. How is 't with Serafina ?

Fab. Nay, you know.
Ever the same.

Alv. You mean still weeping ?

Fab. Ay.

Alv. Yes, from the hour when, fainting in my arms,
She pass'd from raging flame to the wild seas,
And opening those heavenly eyes again,
Still with the hue of death upon her cheek,
She saw herself in my ship — in my power,—
She has not ceas'd to weep ; all my caresses

Digitized by Google

Unable to console her.
I fondly hoped that she —

Enter SERAFINA.

Ser. Good Fabio, [*Exit* FABIO.
Leave us awhile. "You fondly hoped," Alvaro —
So much I heard, connected with my name;
And I perhaps have something on that text
Would clear the matter up to both of us.
"You fondly hoped"— was 't not that I might be
So frail, so lost to shame, and so inconstant,
That for the loss of husband, home, and honour,
Lost in one day, I might console myself
With being in his arms, who robb'd me of all!
Was 't this you hoped?

Alv. No, Serafina, but —

Ser. But what?

Alv. And yet perhaps 't was that I hop'd —
The very desperation of my act
Bringing its pardon with it, soon or late,
Seeing, the very element of love
Is rashness, that he finds his best excuse
In having none at all. Ah, Serafina,
How greatly must he love, who all for love
Perils the hope of being loved at all!

Ser. Poor argument! I rather draw that he
Who ventures on such desperate acts can have

Digitized by Google

No true respect for her he outrages,
And therefore no true love. No, daring traitor —
But I 'll not strive to break the heart of flint,
But wear it with my tears. Hear me, Alvaro,
In pity — in mercy — hear me.
This thing is done, there is no remedy,
Let us not waste the time in arguing
What better had been done; the stars so rul'd it —
Yea, providence that rules the stars. Well then,
What next? Alvaro, I would speak of this;
And if 't be right I owe you any thing,
Be it for this one boon, a patient hearing.
Listen to me —
I never draw a breath but 't is on fire
With Juan's vengeance; never move a step
But think I see his fierce eyes glaring at me
From some dark corner of this desolate house
In which my youth is buried. And what gain *you*
By all this crime and misery? My body,
But not my soul; without possessing which,
Beauty itself is but a breathing corpse,
But a cold marble statue, unsuffus'd
With the responsive hue of sympathy,
Possess'd, but not enjoy'd.
Oh, ill betide that villain love, not love,
That all its object and affection finds
In the mere contact of encircling arms!

Digitized by Google

But if this move you not — consider, Alvaro —
Don Juan is a nobleman — as such
Bound to avenge his honour; he must know
'T was you who did this monstrous act, for Flora
Would tell him all. There is one remedy:
'T is this, that you, despairing of my love,
Which you can never gain — forego me quite,
And give me up to some cold convent's cloister,
Where buried I may wear away —

Alv. No more,
Rather than give you up again, Serafina,
Pray heaven's thunder — *(Shot within.)*

Ser. Again, this dreadful omen!
'T is for my death!

Alv. Fear not — Belardo! ho!
What shot was that?

Enter BELARDO.

Bel. Your sister Porcia
Is coming up the mountain; nay, is now
At the very gate.

Ser. O, whither must I go!

Alv. Belardo, lead her hence.

Bel. Not that way, sir,
By which your sister enters.

Alv. In here then.
I 'll go and meet Porcia.

Digitized by Google

Ser. Mercy, heaven!

[*She goes in at one door, as* PORCIA *enters by another.*

Alv. How now, Porcia, you look pleased to-day!

Por. And well I may — for two reasons, Alvaro.

Alv. Well, what are they?

Por. First, I have got my father to relax in his humour against you.

Alv. My good sister!

Por. So as he will see you at Bellaflor this very evening.

Alv. Good! and your second reason?

Por. That coming up the pass I made the crowning shot of my life with this arquebuss — a hare at full speed — flying, I might say.

Alv. Give you joy of both your hits, Porcia.

Por. I am so proud of the last (though glad of the first, Alvaro) that I shall try my luck and skill a little longer about the castle this evening.

Alv. So —

Por. You will not wait for me, but go down at once to Bellaflor, and show my father you value his forgiveness by your haste to acknowledge it.

Alv. You say well; but you will go with me?

Por. Fear not, I shall soon be after you.

Alv. Well, if so, then — *(apart to* BELARDO,) Belardo, remember you get the lady to her room directly my sister is gone out.

Digitized by Google

Por. Our roads lie together as far as the gate at least. *(Aside to* BELARDO.) If the Prince happen to come hither, tell him to wait for me, Belardo; I shall be back directly. Come, brother.

[*Exeunt* ALVARO *and* PORCIA.

Bel. They say a Pander is a good business; and yet here am I ministering both to brother and sister with very little profit at the year's end.

Ser. (entering cautiously). Porcia 's gone?

Bel. Yes, she is gone.

Ser. Had she resolv'd on going into the room where I was she could have done it; there was neither key nor bolt within. But she is gone and I can get to my own.

Bel. No.

Ser. Belardo! why?

Bel. Some one coming.

Ser. Again! [*She hides as before.*

Enter PRINCE.

Prince. How now, Belardo, where is your mistress? she advised me her brother would be away, and she here this evening.

Bel. Your Highness comes in good time. She went with him, but will be back directly. She is here.

Enter PORCIA.

Por. Not far behind, you see. Scarce had he taken the turn to Bellaflor, when I turn'd back.

Digitized by Google

Prince. How shall I thank you for this favour?

Por. My brother's living here has been the reason of our not meeting before; but that is remedied for the future.

Prince. And how?

Por. He is at last reconciled to my father, and is even now gone home, to Bellaflor.

Prince (aside). My heart thanks you but little, being away with another; but if I cannot avenge memory, I will thus try and deceive or amuse it. My lovely Porcia!

Bel. (aside). She hears every word they say!

Por. Ah, you flatter still.

Prince. Flatter!

Por. Do I not know there is a Siren at Naples —

Prince. Porcia, to prove to you how unfounded that suspicion is, I have these many days wholly quitted Naples, and, out of a melancholy that has taken hold of me, now live retired in a little Villa hard by this: you may imagine at least one reason for my doing so. And so enchanted am I with my solitude, that till this evening (when you broke it as I could wish) I have not once stirred abroad; my only occupation being to watch some pictures that I am having done, by the best masters of Italy and of Spain too; one of which country I have happen'd on, who might compete with Apelles. As I told

Digitized by Google

you, I have spent whole days in watching them at [work.

Por. My jealousy whispered —

Enter BELARDO.

Bel. Unlucky to be sure.

Por. What now? [denly?

Bel. What can make your brother return so sud-

Por. My brother!

Bel. He is now at the gate.

Por. He must suspect the Prince! O, my lord, hide yourself.

Prince. Where?

Por. Any where! — quick! here.

[*She puts him where* SERAFINA *is.*

Prince. For your sake, Porcia.

Enter ALVARO.

Alv. I cannot be easy till I am assured that Serafina —— Porcia here?

Por. Alvaro!

Alv. You left me on a sudden?

Por. I was tired, and came back for rest.

Alv. So —

Por. But you?

Alv. I bethought me that, considering my father's late indisposition toward me, it were better you were at my side when I went to him.

Por. So —

Digitized by Google

Alv. So that if he should relapse into ill-humour, you know how to direct him.

Por. Well, shall we start again together?

Alv. Is not that best?

Por. As you please.

Alv. (aside). She will not then stumble on Serafina.

Por. (aside). I shall so get him out of the Prince's way. [*Exeunt* PORCIA *and* ALVARO.

Bel. Now then the two imprison'd ones get out.

Enter the PRINCE, *and* SERAFINA, *her hand before her face.*

Ser. In vain — you shall not know me.

Prince. Nay, in vain
You try to be unknown.

Ser. Consider —

Prince. Nay,
Down with that little hand, too small a cloud
To hide the heaven of your beauty from me.
Lady, I know you — but one such. And know
That love himself has wrought a miracle,
To this unlikeliest place, by means unlikeliest,
Bringing us here together.

Bel. Only this was wanting to the plot! The sister's gallant in love with the brother's mistress!

Ser. Generous Orsino! if I try in vain
To hide me from you — wretched that I am

Digitized by Google

To have to hide at all — but the less wretched
Being unmaskt by your nobility —
I ask this mercy at your feet; betray not
The secret chance has now betray'd to you.
I am a wretch'd woman, you a Prince.
Grant me this boon; and yet one more, to leave me
To weep my miseries in solitude. [name,

Prince. Madam, your prayer is not in vain. Your
Upon the word and honour of a Prince,
Shall never pass my lips.
And for that second wish, hardest of all,
I yet will pay for one delicious glance
The greatest price I can, by leaving you.
Farewell — you owe me more anxiety
Than you believe.

Ser. I shall not be asham'd
To own the debt, though hopeless to repay it.
But heav'n shall do that for me. Farewell, my lord.

Prince. Farewell. [*Exeunt* PRINCE *and* SERAFINA.

Bel. I wonder if they know the ancient line,
"I 'll keep your secret, only you keep mine." [*Exit.*

SCENE III. *The* PRINCE'S *Villa.*— *Enter* DON JUAN *in poor apparel; and* CELIO.

Cel. Your business with the Prince, sir?

Juan. Only to speak
About a picture I have finish'd for him.

Digitized by Google

Cel. He is not here at present; not, I think,
Return'd from hunting.

Juan. Will he soon be home?

Cel. I cannot speak to that, sir. [*Exit* CELIO.

Juan. Why, what a fate is mine!
All of a sudden — but I dare not say it;
Scarce could I of myself believe it, if
I told it to myself; so with some things
'T is easier to bear, than hear of them;
And how much happens daily in this strange world,
Far easier to be done than be believed.
Who could have thought that I, being what I was
A few days back, am what I am; to this
Reduc'd by that name *Honour;* whose nice laws,
Accurst be he who framed!
Little he knew the essence of the thing
He legislated for, who put my honour
Into another's hand; made my free right
Another's slave, for others to abuse,
And then myself before the world arraign'd,
To answer for a crime against myself!
And one being vain enough to make the law,
How came the silly world to follow it,
Like sheep to their own slaughter! And in all
This silly world is there a greater victim
To its accursed custom than myself!

Digitized by Google

Enter LEONELO, *poorly drest.*

Leon. Yes, one,
Who follows your misfortunes, and picks up
The crumbs of misery that fall from you;
My chief subsistence now.
Juan. And I have left
Country and home to chase this enemy,
Of whom as yet no vestige —
Leon. And no wonder,
Seeing he travels with you.
Juan. In these rags —
Leon. And very hungry; and so we come at last
To Naples; for what purpose?
Juan. Why, if 't be
Some former lover; would he not return
To his own country, and hers?
Leon. In which meanwhile
We starve without a stiver in our pockets,
While friends swarm round us, if you would, my lord,
Reveal yourself.
Juan. Shorn of my honour? No!
Leon. And I, not being shorn of appetite,
Would publish my disgraceful want of food
To all the world. There is Don Luis now,
Your ancient friend.
Juan. What friend but, if he be
True to himself and me, must be my enemy,

Digitized by Google

And either wholly turn his face away,
Or look at me with pity and contempt?
I will reveal myself to no one, nay,
Reveal *myself* I cannot,— not myself
Until I be aveng'd.

Leon. And so you make
The painter's trade your stalking-horse,
To track your enemy, and in these rags
Come to the Prince.

Juan. Oh let me die in rags,
Rather than he should recognise me! Once
He saw me —

Leon. O, my lord, fear not for that;
Hunger, and rags, and sleeplessness, and anguish,
Have chang'd you so your oldest friend would pass you.

Juan. They have that merit then. But see — the Prince.

Enter PRINCE.

I kiss your Highness' hand.

Prince. Well, Spaniard,
What would you with me?

Juan. I waited on your Highness,
To tell you of a picture I had finisht.
Thinking your Grace might like —

Prince. I thank you, sir,
What is the subject?

Digitized by Google

Juan. Hercules, my lord;
Wherein (unless I do deceive myself)
I think the fair and terrible are join'd
With some success.
Prince. As how?
Juan. As thus, my lord.
The point I have chosen in that history
Is where the faithless Centaur carries off
Dejanira, while beyond the river
Stands Hercules with such a face and gesture
As not a man, I think, who looks on it,
But would exclaim, "Jealousy and Revenge!"
Prince. I long to see it.
Juan. That is the main group;
But far away, among the tangled thicks
Of a dark mountain gap, this Hercules
Fires his own funeral pile to the smoky clouds.
And I would have this motto for the whole,
"So Jealousy in its own flames expires."
Prince. Not only do I like the subject well,
But now especially, being deeply scorcht,
Not with the flame that burn'd up Hercules,
But that for which the unlucky Centaur died.
Juan. Indeed, my lord.
Prince. Indeed — and, having done
This picture for me, you shall set about
One other.

Digitized by Google

Juan. At your pleasure.

Prince. You shall know then,
That of a certain lady, whom but once
I saw, and for a moment, I became
Infatuated so, her memory
Every where and for ever, day and night,
Pursues me. Hopeless of obtaining her,
And ev'n of ever seeing her again,
Chance has discover'd to me where she lives
Conceal'd — I know not why, but so it is —
And 't would at least console my hopeless love,
To have her picture. You are a foreigner
Who know not nor are known by any here,
So I can better trust you with a secret
I dare not even to herself reveal.

Juan. I 'll do my best to serve you; but I fear,
If she be such a creature as you say,
That I shall fail to satisfy myself
Or you.

Prince. Why so?

Juan. I tried at such a face
Once.

Prince. Nay, I know that beauty's subtlest essence
Is most impossible to seize. But yet
I shall commit this business to your hands
Most confidently.

Juan. I 'll do my best.

Digitized by Google

Prince. Come then,
Remembering this business must be done
With all despatch and secrecy. Yourself
Must not be seen by her, nor I, who know not
(I told you) how or why she should be there;
But my authority, and a little gold,
(At least, I hope,) shall set the door ajar,
That you may catch a sight of her. Myself
Will be at hand, and ready to protect you
Against all danger.

Juan. I will trust your Highness,
And also (let me say so) trust myself,
Although but a poor painter.

Prince. I believe it;
And each of us shall play his part, I think,
That neither shall depart unsatisfied. [*Exit* PRINCE.

Juan. Perhaps, but not as you suppose. Leonelo,
Put up my brushes and my colours, and —
My pistols with them.

Leon. Pistols! Is 't to paint
In body colour?

Juan. Put them up.

Leon. And whither
Are we to carry them?

Juan. I do not know.
Whither the Prince shall carry me, I go.

[*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE IV. *A room in* DON LUIS' *Villa.—Enter* LUIS *and* ALVARO.

Alv. Now, sir, that (thanks to Porcia) you have open'd
Your arms to me once more, I cannot rest
(So favour ever calls for favour) till
You tell me what the inward trouble is
That mars your outward feature. I was cause
Of so much trouble to you, that I dread
Lest of this also, which with troubled looks
You still keep speaking to yourself apart,
Like people in a play.

Luis. Alvaro, no.
Thank God, this trouble lies not at your door.
Let that suffice.

Alv. You will not trust me, sir?

Luis. Why will you press me? since you must be told,
It is about my friend — Don Juan Roca.

Alv. Don Juan!

Luis. Yes, Don Juan.

Alv. What of him?
(I 'll drink the cup at once!) *(aside).*

Luis. What evil star
Made him my friend! [happen'd?

Alv. Too true! *(aside).* But what has

Luis. Why will you know? and should I dare to tell

Digitized by Google

My friend's dishonour? Well, no more than this —
Some wretch — some villain — some accurs'd — but
Be there bad name enough to brand him by,
I have not breath for it — nor is it well
For you or for myself — has ravisht from him
His wife, his Serafina.
And I, O God! not able to avenge him!
Alv. (aside). Does he know all? and knowing whose
the crime
Cannot, he says, avenge it on his son?
Shall I then tell, and gain at least the grace
Of a confession? Hear me, sir.
Luis. Nay, nay,
I know what you would say, how vain it is
To vex myself who cannot help my friend —
We neither knowing who the villain is,
Nor whither both are fled: heaven! if we did,
I should not now be idly moaning here. [a clue,
Alv. All 's safe! *(aside).* Nor I, sir; give me but
(Not only for Don Juan's sake, but yours,)
I 'll track the villain through the world.
Luis. Alvaro,
Your words are music to me.
Alv. Still, my father,
I will say what to say you said was vain.
Until some clue be found, let not this grief
Consume you so.

Digitized by Google

Luis. Such wounds are hard to heal.
Yet, quicken'd by your courage, and to show
How well I like your counsel — come, Alvaro,
I will with you to your hill castle there;
That which has been your banishment so long,
Shall witness now our reconciliation.
We 'll go this evening — now — together.
Alv. Good, sir.
But pardon me, let me go on before
To apprise Belardo of your going thither —
And also Serafina! *(apart).* [*Exit.*
Luis. Be it so! [and fain
Julia (entering). My lord, Don Pedro is without,
Would speak to you.
Luis. Admit him, Julia.
The wound re-opens — Serafina's father!
No doubt upon what errand.

Enter DON PEDRO.

Ped. Ah, Don Luis,
Your arms! *(they embrace).*
Luis. Don Pedro, I must surely thank
The cause to which my poor retirement owes
This honour.
Ped. Yet a thankless cause, Don Luis.
These many days I have heard nothing of
Don Juan and my daughter; they neither write

Digitized by Google

Themselves, nor any one to whom I write
To ask about them answers to the purpose.
What may this mean? I have come hither thinking
That you, who are the model of all friends,
May deal more clearly with me. You may think
What I endure from this suspense. In mercy
Relieve me from it quickly.

Luis (aside). Poor old man;
What shall I say? tell his grey hairs at once
The ruin of his honour and his love?

Ped. You pause, my lord!

Luis. And yet I need not wonder,
I nothing hear of them if you do not.

Ped. And you know nothing of them?

Enter PORCIA *hurriedly.*

Por. Sir, I hear
You are going (are you not?) this evening
To the castle, with my brother.
But who is this?

Ped. Ever your slave, sweet lady.

Por. Oh, pardon me, my lord.

Luis. Nay, pardon *me*
That I cut short your compliments, Porcia.
(This interruption, come so opportune,
Shall carry what ill news I have to tell
Into the open air at least.) Don Pedro,

Digitized by Google

I am going to the mountain, as she says;
You to the city; for some way at least
Our roads are one, and I would talk with you
About this business without interruption.
Will 't please you come?

Ped. Your pleasure 's mine. Adieu, Fair lady.

Por. Farewell, sir.

Luis. Porcia, you
Will follow in the carriage.

[*Exeunt* LUIS *and* PEDRO.

Por. And should go
More gladly, were my lover there to meet me. [*Exit.*

SCENE V. *The garden under* ALVARO'S *castle.—A large grated door in the centre.—Enter* PRINCE, JUAN, LEONELO, *and* BELARDO.

Prince (to Belardo). You know your office; take this diamond by way of thanks.

Bel. I know little of diamonds but that they sell for less than you give for them. But this [*to* JUAN] is to be your post.

Juan. I am ready.

Prince. Remember, Spaniard, it is for *me* you run this hazard, if there be any; I shall be close at hand to protect you. Be not frightened.

Digitized by Google

Juan. Your Highness does not know me: were it otherwise, danger cannot well appal him whom sorrows like mine have left alive.

Bel. And, another time— doubloons, not diamonds.

[*Exeunt* PRINCE *and* LEONELO.

Here she mostly comes of an evening, poor lady, to soothe herself, walking and sitting here by the hour together. This is where you are to be. Go in; and mind you make no noise.

[*Puts* JUAN *into the grated door, and locks it.*

Juan (through the grated window). But what are you about?

Bel. Locking the door to make all sure.

Juan. But had it not better be unlockt in case —

Bel. Hush! she comes.

Juan. My palette then.

Enter SERAFINA.

Ser. How often and how often do I draw
My resolution out upon one side,
And all my armed sorrows on the other,
To fight the self-same battle o'er again!

Juan. He stands in the way; I cannot see her face.

Bel. Still weeping, madam?

Ser. Wonder not, Belardo:
The only balm I have. You pity me:
Leave me alone then for a while, Belardo;

Digitized by Google

The breeze that creeps along the whispering trees
Makes me feel drowsy.

Juan (to BELARDO) *whispering.* She turns her head
I cannot see her still. [away,

Ser. What noise was that?

Bel. Madam?

Ser. I thought I heard a whisper.

Bel. Only
The breeze, I think. If you would turn this way,
I think 't would blow upon you cooler.

Ser. Perhaps it will.
Thank you. I am very miserable and very weary.

Bel. She sleeps: that is the lady.
Make most of time: [*Exit.*

Juan. Yes. Now then for my pencil.
Serafina! found at last! Whose place is this?
The Prince? no! But the stray'd lamb being here,
The wolf is not far off. She sleeps! I thought
The guilty never slept: and look, some tears
Still lingering on the white rose of her cheek.
Be those the drops, I wonder,
Of guilty anguish, or of chaste despair?
This death-like image is the sculptor's task,
Not mine.
Or is it I who sleep, and dream all this,
And dream beside, that once before I tried
To paint that face — the daylight drawing in

Digitized by Google

As now — and when somehow the lamp was out,
A man — I fail'd: and what love fail'd to do,
Shall hate accomplish? She said then, if ever
She suffer'd me to draw her face again,
Might she die for it. Into its inmost depth
Heav'n drew that idle word, and it returns
In thunder.

Ser. (dreaming). Juan! Husband! on my knees.
Oh Juan — slay me not!

Enter ALVARO; *she wakes and rushes to him.*

Alvaro,
Save me, oh save me from him!

Alv. So the wretch
Thrives by another's wretchedness. My love!

Juan. Alvaro, by the heavens!

Alv. Calm, yourself;
You must withdraw awhile. Come in with me.

Juan. Villain!

Ser. (clinging to ALVARO). What 's that!

Juan (shaking at the door). The door is fast;
Open it, I say! —
Then die — thou and thy paramour!

[*Shoots a pistol at each through the grating.— Both fall:* SERAFINA *into the arms of* BELARDO, *who has come in during the noise.— Then directly enter* DON LUIS, PEDRO, PORCIA.

Digitized by Google

Luis. What noise is this?

Ser. My father!—in your arms
To die;—not by your hand—Forgive me—Oh!
[*Dies.*

Ped. (taking her in his arms). My Serafina!

Luis. And Alvaro!

Alv. Ay,
But do not curse me now! [*Dies.*

Enter the PRINCE *and* LEONELO.

Leon. They must have found him out.

Prince. Whoever dares
Molest him, answers it to me. Open the door.
But what is this? [BELARDO *unlocks the door.*

Juan (coming out). A picture—
Done by the Painter of his own Dishonour
In blood.
I am Don Juan Roca. Such revenge
As each would have of me, now let him take,
As far as one life holds. Don Pedro, who
Gave me that lovely creature for a bride,
And I return to him a bloody corpse;
Don Luis, who beholds his bosom's son
Slain by his bosom friend; and you, my lord,
Who, for your favours, might expect a piece
In some far other style of art than this:

Digitized by Google

Deal with me as you list; 't will be a mercy
To swell this complement of death with mine;
For all I had to do is done, and life
Is worse than nothing now.

Prince. Get you to horse,
And leave the wind behind you.

Luis. Nay, my lord,
Whom should he fly from? not from me at least,
Who lov'd his honour as my own, and would
Myself have help'd him in a just revenge,
Ev'n on an only son.

Ped. I cannot speak,
But I bow down these miserable gray hairs
To other arbitration than the sword;
Ev'n to your Highness' justice.

Prince. Be it so.
Meanwhile —

Juan. Meanwhile, my lord, let me depart;
Free, if you will, or not. But let me go,
Nor wound these fathers with the sight of one
Who has cut off the blossom of their age:
Yea, and his own, more miserable than all.
They know me; that I am a gentleman,
Not cruel, nor without what seem'd due cause
Put on this bloody business of my honour;
Which having done, I will be answerable
Here and elsewhere, to all for all.

Digitized by Google

Prince. Depart
In peace.

Juan. In peace! Come, Leonelo.

[*He goes out slowly, followed by* LEONELO: *and the curtain falls.*

Some alterations of this play were made with a view to the English stage, where, spite of the slightness of many parts, I still think it might be tried.

Its companion play, the *Medico de su Honra*, is far more famous; has some more terrible, perhaps some finer, situations; but inferior, I think, in variety of scene, character, and incident.

It may add a little to the reader's interest, as it did to mine, to learn from Mr. Ticknor, that Calderon wrote a "*Tratado defendiendo la nobleza de la Pintura.*"

Digitized by Google

KEEP YOUR OWN SECRET.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ALEXANDER, *Prince of Parma.*

NISIDA, *his Sister.*

DON CESAR, *his Secretary.*

DON ARIAS, } *Gentlemen of the Court.*
DON FELIX, }

DONNA ANNA, *Sister to Don Felix.*

ELVIRA, *her Maid.*

LAZARO, *Don Cesar's Servant.*

Digitized by Google

KEEP YOUR OWN SECRET.

(NADIE FIE SU SECRETO.)

ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Palace.—Enter the* PRINCE ALEXANDER *and* DON ARIAS.

Prince. I SAW her from her carriage, Arias,
As from her East, alight, another sun
New ris'n, or doubling him whose envious ray
Seem'd as I watch'd her down the corridor,
To swoon about her as she mov'd along;
Until, descending tow'rd my sister's room,
She set, and left me hesitating like
Some traveller who with the setting sun
Doth fear to lose his way; her image still,
Lost from without, dazzling my inner eye—
Can this be love, Don Arias? if not,
What is it? something much akin to love.

Ar. But had you not, my lord, often before
Seen Donna Anna?

Digitized by Google

Prince. Often.

Ar. Yet till now
Never thus smitten! how comes that, my lord?

Prince. Well askt — though ignorantly. Know
That not an atom in the universe [you not
Moves without some particular impulse
Of heaven? What yesterday I might abhor,
To-day I may delight in: what to-day
Delight in, may as much to-morrow hate.
All changes; 't is the element the world,
And we who live there, move in. Thus with me;
This lady I have often seen before,
And, as you say, was ne'er a sigh the worse,
Until to-day; when, whether she more fair,
Or I less blind, I know not — only know
That she has slain me; though to you alone
Of all my friends I would my passion own.

Ar. Much thanks; yet I must wonder, good
my lord,
First, that in all your commerce with Don Cupid
You never, I think, dealt seriously till now.

Prince. Perhaps: but if Don Cupid, Arias,
Never yet tempted me with such on offer?
Besides, men alter; princes who are born
To greater things than love, nevertheless
May at his feet their sovereignty lay down
Once in their lives; as said the ancient sage —

Digitized by Google

"He were a fool who had not done so once,
Though he who does so twice is twice a fool."

Ar. So much for that. My second wonder is,
That you commit this secret to *my* keeping;
An honour that, surpassing my desert,
Yea, and ambition, frights me. Good my lord,
Your secretary, Don Cesar,—
To whom you almost trust the government
Of your dominions,— whom you wholly love,
I also love, and would not steal from him
A confidence that is by right his own;
Call him, my lord: into his trusty heart
Pour out your own; let not my loyalty
To you endanger what I owe to him;
For if you lay 't on me —

Prince. Don Arias,
I love Don Cesar with as whole a heart
As ever. He and I from infancy
Have grown together; as one single soul
Our joys and sorrows shar'd; till finding him
So wise and true, as to another self
Myself, and my dominion to boot,
I did intrust: you are his friend, and surely
In honouring you I honour him as well.
Besides, Arias, I know not how it is,
For some while past a change has come on him;
I know not what the cause: he is grown sad,

Digitized by Google

Neglects his business — if I call to him,
He hears me not, or answers from the purpose.
Or in mid answer stops. And, by the way,
We being on this subject, I would fain,
Being so much his friend, for both our sakes,
You would find out what ails and occupies him;
Tell him from me to use my power as ever,
Absolute still: that, loving him so well,
I 'd know what makes him so unlike himself;
That, knowing what it is, I may at least,
If not relieve his sorrow, share with him.

Ar. Oh, not unjustly do you bear the name
Of Alexander, greater than the great
In true deserts!

Enter LAZARO *(with a letter).*

Laz. Not here? my usual luck; had I bad news to tell my master, such as would earn me a broken head, I should find him fast enough; but now when I have such a letter for him as must bring me a handsome largess, oh, to be sure he 's no where to be found. But I 'll find him if I go to—

Prince. How now? Who 's there?

Laz. The Prince! — Mum! *(hides the letter and*

Prince. Who is it, I say? *[turns to go).*

Ar. A servant, my lord, of Don Cesar's, looking for his master, I suppose.

Digitized by Google

Prince. Call him back; perhaps he can tell us something of his master's melancholy.

Ar. True, my lord. Lazaro!

Laz. Eh?

Ar. His Highness would speak with you.

Prince. Come hither, sir.

Laz. Oh, my lord, I do well enough here: if I were once to kiss your Highness' feet, I could not endure common shoe-leather for a month to come.

Ar. His humour must excuse him.

Prince. You are Don Cesar's servant, are you?

Laz. Yes, one of your trinity; so please you.

Prince. Of my trinity, how so?

Laz. As thus; your Highness is one with Don Cesar; I am one with him; ergo —

Prince. Well, you are a droll knave. But stop, stop: Whither away so fast?

Laz. Oh, my lord, I am sure you will have none of so poor an article as myself, who am already the property of another too.

Prince. Nay, I like your humour, so it be in season. But there is a time for all things. I want you now to answer me seriously and not in jest: and tell me the secret of your master's melancholy, which I feel as my own. But perhaps he is foolish who looks for truth in the well of a jester's mouth.

Digitized by Google

Laz. But not so foolish as he who should throw it there. And therefore since my master is no fool, it is unlikely he should have committed his mystery to me. However, in my capacity of *Criado*, whose first commandment it is, "Thou shalt reveal thy master's weakness as thy own," I will tell you what I have gathered from stray sighs and interjections of his on the subject. There has lately come over from Spain a certain game of great fashion and credit called Ombre. This game Don Cesar learned; and, playing at it one day, and happening to hold Basto, Malilla, Spadille, and Ace of Trumps in his hand, stood for the game; and lost. On which he calls out "foul play," leaves the party, and goes home. Well, at night, I being fast asleep in my room, comes he to me in his shirt, wakes me up, and, dealing cards as it were with his hands, says, "If I let this trick go, I am embeasted for that, and besides put the lead into the enemy's hand; therefore I trump with one of my matadores, and then I have four hearts, of which the ten-ace *must* make, or else let them give me back my nine cards as I had them before discarding." And this I take it is the cause of his dejection.[1]

Prince. The folly of asking you has been properly

[1] I will not answer for the accuracy of my version of this dilemma at Ombre: neither perhaps could Lazaro for his: which, together with the indifference (I presume) of all present readers on the subject, has

Digitized by Google

chastised by the folly of your answer. You are right; Don Cesar would never have intrusted with a grave secret one only fit for idle jest.

Laz. Ah, they are always importing some nonsense or other from Spain. God keep your Highness; I will take warning not to intrude my folly upon you any more (until you try again to worm some truth out of me). [*Aside and exit.*

Prince. A droll fellow! Were one in the humour, he might amuse.

Ar. Oh, you will always find him in the same, whenever you are in the mood. He cannot be sad.

Prince. He cannot be very wise then.

Ar. He is as God made him. Did you never hear any of his stories?

Prince. I think not.

Ar. He will hardly tell you one of himself that yet might amuse you. He was one day playing at dice with me; lost all his money; and at last pawned his very sword, which I would not return him, wishing to see how he got on without. What does he but finds him up an old hilt, and clapping on a piece of lath to that, sticks it in the scabbard. And so wears it now.

made me indifferent about it. Cesar, I see, starts with almost the same fine hand Belinda had, who also was

"*Just in the jaws of ruin and Codille,*"

as he was, but, unlike him, saved by that unseen king of hearts that

"*Lurk'd in her hand and mourn'd his captive queen.*"

Digitized by Google

Prince. We will have some amusement of him by and by.

Alas! in vain I hope with idle jest
To cool the flame that rages in my breast.
Go to Don Cesar: get him to reveal
The sorrows that he feeling I too feel.
I 'll to my sister; since, whether away,
Or present, Donna Anna needs must slay.
I will not starve with absence, but e'en die
Burn'd in the sovereign splendour of her eye.

[*Exeunt severally.*

SCENE II. *A Room in* DON CESAR'S *House.— Enter* DON CESAR *and* LAZARO *meeting.*

Laz. A letter, sir, Elvira just gave me. [it?

Ces. A letter! Give it me. How long have you had

Laz. I looked for you first at the Prince's.

Ces. Where I was not?

Laz. You know it! I am always looking for what cannot be found in time. But if you like the letter I shall claim my largess for all that.

Ces. Ah! what does she say?

Laz. The folly, now, of a man with his watch in his hand asking other people for the time of day!

Ces. My heart fails me. Even if your news be good it comes late. [*He reads the letter.*

Laz. So let my reward then — only let it come at last.

Digitized by Google

Ces. O Lazaro, half drunk with my success,
I lose my wits when most I 've need of them.
She writes to me, my lady writes to me
So sweetly, yea, so lovingly;
Methinks I want to tear my bosom open,
And lay this darling letter on my heart.
Where shall I shrine it?

Laz. O, if that be all,
Keep it to patch your shoe with; I did so once
When some such loving lady writ to me,
And it did excellently; keeping tight
Her reputation, and my shoe together.

Ces. O Lazaro! good Lazaro! take for this
The dress I wore at Florence.

Laz. Bless you, sir.

Ces. My letter! oh my lady!

Laz. I bethink me
Upon remembrance, sir, as I may say,
The pockets of that dress were very large
And empty.

Ces. They shall be well lined. Don Arias!

Enter DON ARIAS.

Ar. Ay, Cesar, Arias coming to complain
On his own score, and that of one far greater.

Ces. A solemn preamble. But for the charge,
And him who heads it.

Digitized by Google

Ar. The Prince, our common Lord,
Who much perplext and troubled too, Don Cesar,
About the melancholy that of late
(No need say more of that which best you know)
Has clouded over you, has askt of me
Whom he will have to be your bosom friend,
The cause of it.—Alas, 't is very plain
I am not what he thinks.—Well, I am come,
Say not as friend, but simple messenger,
To ask it of yourself.

Ces. You do yourself
And me wrong, Arias; perchance the Prince—
But yet say on.

Ar. His Highness bids me say
That if your sadness rise from any sense
Of straiten'd power, whatever residue
Of princely rule he hitherto reserved,
He gives into your hands; as sov'reign lord
To govern his dominions as your own.
Thus far his Highness. For myself, Don Cesar,
Having no other realm to lord you of
Than a true heart, I 'd have you think betimes,
That, deep as you are rooted in his love,
Nay, may be all the more for that, he feels
Your distaste to his service, and himself:
I 'd have you think that all a subject's merits,
However highly heap'd, however long,

Digitized by Google

Still are but heaps of sand, that some new tide
Of royal favour may wash clean away,
One little error cancelling perhaps
The whole account of life-long services.
Be warn'd by me; clear up your heavy brow,
And meet his kind looks with a look as kind,
Whatever cloud be on the heart within:
If not your friend, Don Cesar, as your servant
Let me implore you.

Ces. Oh, Don Arias,
I kiss his Highness' feet, and your kind hands
That bring his favours to me: and to each
Will answer separately. First to him; —
Tell him I daily pray that Heav'n so keep
His life, that Time, on which his years are strung,
Forget the running count; and, secondly,
Assure him, Arias, the melancholy
He speaks of not a jot abates my love
Of him, nor my alacrity in his service;
Nay, that 't is nothing but a little cloud
In which my books have wrapt me so of late
That, duty done, I scarce had time or spirit
Left to enjoy his gracious company:
Perhaps too, lest he surfeit of my love,
I might desire by timely abstinence
To whet his liking to a newer edge.
Thus much for him. For you, Don Arias,

Digitized by Google

Whose equal friendship claims to be repaid
In other coin, I will reveal to you
A secret scarcely to myself confest,
Which yet scarce needs your thanks, come at a moment
When my brimm'd heart had overflow'd in words,
Whether I would or no. Oh, Arias,
Wonder not then to see me in a moment
Flying from melancholy to mere joy,
Between whose poles he ever oscillates,
Whose heart is set in the same sphere with mine:
Which saying, all is said. I love, my friend;
How deeply, let this very reticence,
That dare not tell what most I feel, declare.
Yes, I have fixt my eyes upon a star;
Toward which to spread my wings ev'n against hope,
Argues a kind of honour. I aspir'd,
And (let not such a boast offend the ears,
That of themselves have open'd to my story,)
Not hopelessly: the heav'n to which I pray'd
Answer'd in only listening to my vows;
Such daring not defeated not disdain'd.
Two years I worshipp'd at a shrine of beauty,
That modesty's cold hand kept stainless still;
Till wearied, if not mov'd by endless prayers,
She grants them; yea, on this most blessed day,
With this thrice blessed letter. You must see it,
That your felicitations by rebound

Digitized by Google

Double my own; the first victorious trophy
That proud ambition has so humbly won.
Oh, Arias, 't is much I have to tell,
And tell you too at once; being none of those
Who overmuch entreaty make the price
Of their unbosoming; who would, if they knew
In what the honour of their lady lies,
Name her at once, or seal their lips for ever.
But you are trusty and discreet: to you
I may commit my heart; beseeching you
To keep this love-song to yourself alone,
Assigning to the Prince, remember this,
My books sole cause of my abstraction.
Donna Anna de Castelvi
(I can go on more freely now the name
Of her I worship bars my lips no more,)
Is she who so divides me from myself,
That what I say I scarcely know, although
I say but what I feel: the melancholy
You ask about, no gloomy sequestration
Out of the common world into a darker,
But into one a thousand times more bright;
And let no man believe he truly loves,
Who lives, or moves, or thinks, or hath his being
In any other atmosphere than Love's,
Who is our absolute master; to recount
The endless bead-roll of whose smiles and tears

Digitized by Google

I 'd have each sleepless night a century.
Much have I said — have much more yet to say!
But read her letter, Arias, the first seal
Of my success, the final one, I think,
Of my sure trust in you; come, share with me
My joy, my glory, my anxiety;
And above all things, once more, Arias,
Down to your secret'st heart this secret slip;
For every secret hangs in greater fear
Between the speaker's mouth and hearer's ear,
Than any peril between cup and lip.

Ar. You have good cause for joy.

Cesar. You will say so
When you have read the letter.

Ar. You desire it. *(Reads.)*

"To confess that one is loved is to confess that one loves too; for there is no woman but loves to be loved. But alas, there is yet more. If to cover my love I have pretended disdain, let the shame of now confessing it excuse me. Come to me this evening, and I will tell you what I can scarce understand myself. Adieu, my love, adieu!"

Your hands are full indeed of happy business.

Ces. Enough: you know what you shall tell the Prince
In my behalf: if he be satisfied
I 'll wait on him directly.

Digitized by Google

Ar. Trust to me.

Ces. Let my sighs help thee forward, O thou sun,
What of thy race in heaven remains to run:
Oh do but think that Dafne in the west
Awaits thee, and anticipate thy rest!

[*Exeunt* CESAR *and* LAZARO.

Ar. Charg'd with two secrets,
One from my Prince, the other from my friend,
Each binding equally to silence, each
Equally the other's revelation needing,
How shall I act, luckless embosomer
Of others' bosoms! how decide between
Loyalty and love with least expense to both!
The Prince's love is but this morning's flower,
As yet unsunn'd on by his lady's favour;
Cesar's of two years' growth, expanded now
Into full blossom by her smiles and tears;
The Prince too loves him whom his lady loves,
And were he told, might uncontested leave
The prize that one he loves already owns;
And so both reap the fruit, and make the excuse
Of broken silence, if it needs must break.
And yet I grope about, afraid to fall
Where ill-advised good-will may ruin all. [*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE III. *A Corridor in the Palace.— Enter* PRINCE, DON FELIX, DONNA ANNA, *and train.*

Prince. I must show you the way.

Anna. Your Highness must not do yourself so great indignity.

Prince. To the bounds at least of my sister's territory.

Anna. Nay, my lord, that were undue courtesy.

Prince. What courtesy, madam, can be undue from any man to any lady?

Anna. When that lady is your subject, whom your very condescension dazzles to her own discomfiture.

Prince. What, as the morning star dazzles the sun whom he precedes as petty harbinger? If I obey you 't is that I fear my own extinction in your rays. Adieu.

Anna. God keep your Highness. [*Exit.*

Prince. Don Felix, will you attend your sister?

Felix. I only stay to thank your Highness, (both as subject and as servant,) for all the honour that you do us; may Heaven so prolong your life that even oblivion herself —

Prince. Nay, truce to compliment: your sister will not of my company, unless under your proxy. So farewell. [*Exit* FELIX.] Is there a greater nuisance than to have such windy nonsense stuff'd into one's ears, when delight is vanished from the eyes!

Digitized by Google

Enter ARIAS.

But, Don Arias! You have seen Cesar?

Ar. Yes, my lord; but ere I tell you about him, would know how far this last interview with Donna Anna has advanced your love.

Prince. Oh Arias, Arias, my love for her
So blends with my solicitude for him,
I scarce can hold me clear between the two.
Yet let me tell you. In my sister's room,
Whither I went, you know, upon our parting,
I saw my lady like a sovereign rose
Among the common flowers; or, if you will,
A star among the roses; or the star
Of stars, the morning star: yea, say at once
The sun himself among the host of heaven!
My eyes and ears were rapt with her; her lips
Not fairer than the words that parted them.
At length she rose to go: like the ev'ning star
Went with the ev'ning; which, how short, say Love
Who 'd spin each golden moment to a year,
Which year would then seem than a moment less.

Ar. Is then, my lord, this passion so deep fixt?

Prince. Nay, but of one day's growth —

Ar. I come in time then,
My lord, in one word, if you love Don Cesar,
Cease to love Donna Anna.

Digitized by Google

Prince. Arias,
He who begins to hint at evil news
Is bound to tell it out — nothing or all.
Why do you hesitate?
Ar. Because, my lord,
But hinting this to you, I break the seal
Of secrecy to him.
Prince. But it is broken;
And so —
Ar. Oh, Cesar, pardon him who fails
His pledge to you to serve his Prince! My lord,
The cloud you long have seen on Cesar's brow
Is not, as he would have you think it, born
Of bookish studies only, but a cloud,
All bright within, though dark to all without,
Of love for one he has for two long years
Silently worshipt.
Prince. Donna Anna!
Ar. Ay.
Prince. Cesar loves Donna Anna! be it so —
I love him, as you say, and would forego
Much for his sake. But tell me, Arias,
Knows Anna of his passion?
Ar. Yes, my lord,
And answers it with hers.
Prince. Oh wretched fate!
Desperate ere jealous — jealous ere in love!

Digitized by Google

If Cesar but lov'd her, I could, methinks,
Have pardon'd, even have advanc'd his suit
By yielding up my own. But that *she* loves,
Blows rivalry into full blaze again.
And yet I will not be so poor a thing
To whine for what is now beyond my reach,
Nor must the princely blood of Parma
Run jealous of a subject's happiness.
They love each other then?

Ar. I even now
Have seen a letter —

Prince. Well?

Ar. That Donna Anna
Has written him, and in such honey'd words —

Prince. Why, is it not enough to know she loves him?
You told me so: my mind made up to that,
Why should a foolish letter fright it back?
And yet — yet, what last spark of mortal love
But must flame up before it dies for ever
To learn but what that foolish letter said!
Know you?

Ar. I saw it.

Prince. You saw it! and what said it?

Ar. After a chaste confession of her love,
Bidding him be to-night under her lattice.

Prince. Under her lattice, while his Prince is left

Digitized by Google

Abroad ; they two to whisper love together,
While he gnaws hopeless jealousy alone.
But why, forsooth, am I to be the victim ?
If I can quench my love for Cesar's sake,
Why not he his for me ? Tell me, Don Arias,
Does Cesar know my passion ?
Ar. How should he,
You having told the secret but to me ?
Prince. By the same means that I know his.
Ar. My lord,
My loyalty might well be spar'd that taunt.
Prince. Ah, Arias, pardon me, I am put out,
But not with you, into whose faithful charge
I vest my love and honour confidently.
Enough, in what I am about to do
I mean no malice or ill play to Cesar:
'T is but an idle curiosity:
And surely 't is but fair, that if his Prince
Leave him the lists to triumph in at leisure,
I may at least look on the game he wins.
You shall keep close to him, and tell me all
That passes between him and her I love.
Ar. But having taunted me with my first step
In your behalf, my lord —
Prince. Nay, sir, my will
At once absolves and authorises you,
For what is told and what remains to tell.

Digitized by Google

Ar. But, sir —
Prince. No more —
Ar. I must obey your bidding,
But yet —
Prince. I may divert my jealousy,
If not avenge it.
Ar. Ah! what straits do those
Who cannot keep their counsel fall into!
Prince. All say so, and all blab, like me and you!
Look where he comes; let us retire awhile.

[PRINCE *and* ARIAS *retire.*

Enter CESAR *and* LAZARO.

Ces. O Phœbus, swift across the skies
Thy blazing carriage post away;
Oh, drag with thee benighted day,
And let the dawning night arise!
Another sun shall mount the throne
When thou art sunk beneath the sea;
From whose effulgence, as thine own,
The affrighted host of stars shall flee.
Laz. A pretty deal about your cares
Does that same Phœbus care or know;
He has to mind his own affairs,
Whether you shake your head or no.
You talk of hastening on the day?
Why, heaven's coachman is the Sun,

Digitized by Google

Who can't be put out of his way
For you, sir, or for any one. [me

Ces. The Prince! and something in my bosom tells
All is not well. My lord, though my repentance
Does not, I trust, lag far behind my fault,
I scarce had dared to approach your Highness' feet,
Had not my friend, Don Arias, been before
As harbinger of my apology.

Prince. Cesar, indeed Don Arias has told me
The story of your sadness: and so well,
I feel it, and excuse it, as my own;
From like experience. I do not resent,
But would divert you from it. Books, my friend,
Truly are so seductive company,
We are apt to sit too long and late with them,
And drowse our minds in their society;
This must not be; the cause of the disease
Once known, the cure is easy; if 't is books
Have hurt you, lay them by awhile, and try
Other society — less learn'd perhaps,
But cheerfuller — exchange the pent-up air
Of a close study for the breathing world.
Come, we 'll begin to-night;
Visit in disguise (as I have wish'd to do)
The city, its taverns, theatres, and streets,
Where music, masque, and dancing may divert
Your melancholy: what say you to this?

Digitized by Google

Ces. Oh, my kind lord, whose single word of pardon
Has turn'd all leaden grief to golden joy,
Made me another man, or, if you will,
The better self I was —
Prince. Why this is well;
To-night together then —
Ces. Yet pardon me.
Prince. How now?
Ces. It almost would revive my pain
That you should spend yourself upon a cure
Your mere forgiveness has already wrought.
Let this day's happiness suffice the day,
And its night also: 't will be doubly sweet,
Unbought by your annoyance.
Prince. Nay, my Cesar,
Fear not for that: after so long estrangement,
My pain would be the losing sight of you
On this first night of your recovery.
Lazaro!
Laz. My lord?
Prince. You too shall go with us.
Laz. And not a trustier shall your Highness find
To guard your steps.
Prince. What! you are valiant?
Laz. As ever girded sword.
Prince. Your weapon good too?

Digitized by Google

Laz. He touches on the quick *(aside).* Yes, good
My lord, for all my poor occasions. [enough,
Although when waiting on your Grace, indeed,
A sword like yours were better.
Prince. You depreciate
Your own to enhance its value. Sharp is 't?
Laz. Ay,
Not a steel buckler but at the first blow
'T would splinter it in two. (The sword I mean. *Aside.)*
Prince. Well temper'd?
Laz. As you bid it.
Prince. And the device
Inscrib'd upon it?
Laz. "Thou shalt do no murder"—
Having no love for homicide, *per se,*
Save on occasion.
Prince. Your description
Makes me desire to see that sword.
Laz. My lord!
Prince. Indeed it does. Show it me.
Laz. Oh, my lord,
I have a vow.
Ces. (aside). Oh weariness!
Prince. A vow?
Laz. Ay, register'd in heaven!
Never to draw this weapon from her sheath
Except on mortal quarrel. If in such

Digitized by Google

Your Highness' service challenge her, why, then
She shall declare herself.
Ces. I 'm desperate!
But yet one effort more. My lord, you see
(You cannot fail) how your mere word of grace
Has of itself brighten'd me up again;
I do beseech you —
Prince. Pardon me, my Cesar,
Rather I see the cloud that 'gins to break
Is not entirely gone; nay, will return
If you be left alone — which must not be:
If not for your sake, Cesar, yet for mine,
Who feel for your disquiet as my own;
And since our hearts are knit so close together,
Yours cannot suffer but mine straightway feels
A common pain; seek we a common cure.
To-night I shall expect you. Until then,
Farewell. [*Exit.*
Ces. Fortune! to see a fair occasion
So patiently pursued, so fairly won,
Lost at the very moment of success!
O Lazaro — what will my lady say!
Laz. That I can't guess.
Ces. What will she do!
Laz. Oh that
Is answer'd far more easily. She 'll stand
All night beside the window to no purpose.

Digitized by Google

Ces. Why she must say my love was all pretence,
And her offended dignity vindicate,
Rejecting me for ever! Misery!

Laz. Dear me, sir, what is now become of all
About, "Thou dawning night, benighted day,"
"Thou coachman sun!" etceteretera?

Ces. Wilt thou be ever fool!

Laz. If thou be not,
Listen — fools' bolts, they say, are quickly shot —
Who secrets have and cannot hold 'em,
Shall surely rue the day they told 'em.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Public Square in Parma.— Night.— Enter* PRINCE, CESAR, FELIX, ARIAS, *and* LAZARO, *disguised.*

Ar. A LOVELY night!

Prince. As Night we choose to call,
When Day's whole sun is but distributed
Into ten thousand stars.

Fel. Beside the moon,
Who lightly muffled like ourselves reveals
Her trembling silver.

Digitized by Google

Laz. What! by way, you mean,
Of making up the account?
Ces. (aside). To think, alas!
The first sweet vintage of my love thus lost,
And, as my lady must too surely think,
By my forgetfulness. *(Aloud.)* My lord, indeed
The night wears on. May not the chiller air
That blows from the returning tide of day
Affect you?
Prince. Nay, my state forbidding me
Much to be seen about the streets by day,
The night must serve my purpose.
Ces. (aside). Patience then!
And I must try and draw my thoughts from her
I cannot reach. *(Aloud.)* How does the lady Flora
Please you, my lord?
Prince. The lady Flora? Oh,
What, she of Milan? Such a distance off
Must cool one's love.
Laz. Ah, very true, my lord;
What use the finest mistress in the moon,
Unless one were the man there?
Ar. Signora Laura
Has a fair figure.
Laz. Yes, and asks a high one.
Felix. A handsome hand.
Laz. At scolding, yes.

Digitized by Google

Ar. I think
She lives close by.
Laz. But don't you bid for her
Without fair trial first, my lord. Your women
Are like new plays, which self-complacent authors
Offer at some eight hundred royals each,
But which, when once they 're tried, you purchase dear
Eight hundred for a royal.
Ces. (aside). Now, methinks,
Ev'n now my lady at the lattice stands
Looking for me in vain and murmuring
" Why comes he not ? I doubted I was late,
But he comes not at all ! " And then — Ah me,
I have forgotten to forget !—
(Aloud.) Celia sings well, my lord ?
Laz. A pretty woman
Can no more sing amiss than a good horse
Be a bad colour.
Ces. The old Roman law
To all the ugly women us'd to assign
The fortunes of the handsome, thinking those
Sufficiently endow'd with their good looks.
Laz. Ah ! and there Laura lives, the lass who said
She 'd sell her house and buy a coach withal ;
And when they ask'd her, where she 'd live, quoth she,
" Why, *in* my coach ! " " But when night comes," say
they,

Digitized by Google

"Where then?"—"Why in the coach-house to be sure!"[1]

Ces. Indeed, indeed, my lord, the night wears on,
And sure your sister lies awake foreboding
Some danger to your person.
Consider her anxiety!

Prince (aside). Nay, *yours*
Lies nearer to my heart.

Ces. My lord?

Prince. I said
No matter for my sister, that was all;
She knows not I 'm abroad.

Ces. My hope is gone!

Laz. There, yonder in that little house, there lives
A girl with whom it were impossible
To deal straightforwardly.

Prince. But why?

Laz. She 's crooked.

Ar. And there a pretty girl enough, but guarded
By an old Dragon aunt.

Laz. O Lord, defend me
From all old women!

Prince. How so, Lazaro?

[1] The ambition for a coach so frequently laughed at by Calderon, is said to be in full force now; not for the novelty of the invention, then, nor perhaps the dignity, so much as for the real comfort of easy and sheltered carriage in such a climate.

Digitized by Google

Laz. Oh, ever since the day I had to rue
The conjurer's old woman.
Prince. Who was she?
Laz. Why, my lord, once upon a time
I fell in love with one who would not have me
Either for love or money; so at last
I go to a certain witch — tell him my story:
Whereon he bids me cut a lock of hair
From my love's head and bring it to him. Well,
I watch'd my opportunity, and one day,
When she was fast asleep, adroitly lopp'd
A lovely forelock from what seem'd her hair,
But was an hair-loom rather from her wig
Descended from a head that once was young
As I thought her. For, giving it the witch,
To work his charm with, in the dead of night,
When I was waiting for my love to come,
Into my bed-room the dead woman stalk'd
To whom the lock of hair had once belong'd,
And claim'd me for her own. O Lord, how soon
"Sweetheart" and "Deary" chang'd to "Apage!"
And flesh and blood to ice.
Ces. (aside). Alas! what boots it trying to forget
That which the very effort makes remember!
Ev'n now, ev'n now, methinks once more I see her
Turn to the window, not expecting me,
But to abjure all expectation,

Digitized by Google

And, as she moves away, saying, (methinks
I hear her,) "Cesar, come when come you may,
You shall not find me here." "Nay, but my love,
Anna! my lady! hear me!" Oh confusion,
Did they observe?

Prince (aside to ARIAS). How ill, Don Arias,
Poor Cesar hides his heart —

Ar. Ev'n now he tries
The mask again.

Prince. Indeed I pity him,
Losing one golden opportunity;
But may not I be pitied too, who never
Shall have so much as one to lose?

Ar. Speak low;
You know her brother 's by.

Prince. No matter; true
Nobility is slowest to suspect.

Musician (sings within).

Ah happy bird, who can fly with the wind,
Leaving all anguish of absence behind;
Like thee could I fly,
Leaving others to sigh,
The lover I sigh for how soon would I find! [1]

Ces. Not an ill voice!

Fel. Nay, very good.

[1] This little song is from the *Desdicha de la Voz.*

Digitized by Google

Prince. How sweetly
Sweet words, sweet air, sweet voice, atone together!
Arias, might we not on this sweet singer
Try Lazaro's metal and mettle? you shall see.
Lazaro!
Laz. My lord!
Prince. I never go abroad
But this musician dogs me.
Laz. Shall I tell him
Upon your Highness's request, politely,
To move away?
Prince. I doubt me, Lazaro,
He will not go for that, he 's obstinate.
Laz. How then, my lord?
Prince. Go up and strike him with your sword.
Laz. But were it brave in me, back'd as I am,
To draw my sword on one poor piping bird?
If I must do it, let me challenge him
Alone to-morrow.
But let me warn him first.
Prince. Do as I bid you,
Or I shall call you coward.
Ces. Lazaro,
Obey his Highness.
Laz. O good providence,
Temper the wind to a shorn lamb!

Digitized by Google

Musician (within).

Ah happy bird, whom the wind and the rain,
And snare of the fowler, beset but in vain;
Oh, had I thy wing,
Leaving others to sing,
How soon would I be with my lover again!

Laz. (aloud within). Pray God, poor man, if thou be innocent
Of any ill intention in thy chirping,
The blade I draw upon thee turn to wood!
A miracle! A miracle! *(Rushing in.)*

Prince. How now?

Laz. The sword I lifted on an innocent man
Has turn'd to wood at his assailant's prayer!
Take it, my lord, lay 't in your armoury
Among the chiefest relics of our time.
I freely give it you, upon condition
You give me any plain but solid weapon
To wear instead.

Prince. You are well out of it.
It shall be so.

Ces. My lord, indeed the dawn
Is almost breaking.

Prince. Let it find us here.
But, my dear Cesar, tell me, are you the better
For this diversion!

Ces. Oh, far cheerfuller.
Though with some little effort.

Digitized by Google

Prince. And I too.
So love is like all other evils known;
With others' sorrow we beguile our own. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The garden of* DONNA ANNA'S *House:* DONNA ANNA *and* ELVIRA *at a window.— Dawn.*

Elv. Yet once more to the window?
Anna. Oh Elvira,
For the last time! now undeceiv'd to know
How much deceiv'd I was!
Alas, until I find myself despis'd,
Methought I was desir'd, till hated, lov'd;
Was 't not enough to know himself belov'd,
Without insulting her who told him so!
Was 't not enough —
Oh wonder not, Elvira, at my passion;
Of all these men's enchantments, none more potent
Than what might seem unlikeliest — their disdain.
Elv. Indeed you have good cause for anger, madam:
But yet one trial more.
Anna. And to what end?
I 'll not play Tantalus again for him.
Oh shameful insult? had I dream'd of it,
Would I have written him so tenderly? [woman
Told my whole heart? — But, once in love, what
Can trust herself, alas, with pen and ink!

Digitized by Google

Elv. Were he to come now after all, how then?
Would you reproach, or turn your back on him,
Or —

Anna. Nay, I know not. Is 't not possible,
He is detain'd, Elvira, by the Prince
Upon state business?

Elv. You excuse him then!

Anna. Oh, any thing to soothe me!

Elv. Who excuses
Will quickly pardon.

Anna. Ay, if he came now,
Now, as you say, Elvira,
And made excuses which I knew were false,
I *would* believe them still. Would he were come
Only to try. Could I be so deceiv'd!

Enter CESAR *and* LAZARO, *below.*

Laz. See you not day has dawn'd, sir?

Ces. Mine, I doubt,
Is set for ever. Yet, in sheer despair,
I come to gaze upon the empty east!
But look!

Laz. Well, sir?

Ces. See you not through the twilight?

Laz. Yes, sir; a woman: and when I say a woman,
I mean two women.

Ces. Oh see if it be she.

Digitized by Google

Laz. 'T would make Elvira jealous, sir.
Ces. Oh lady,
Is it you?
Anna. Yes, I, Don Cesar: who all night
Have waited on your pleasure, unsuspecting
What now too well I know.
My foolish passion, sir, is well reveng'd
By shamed repentance. Oh, you come at last,
Thinking belike, sir, with the morning star
Retrieve the waste of night; oh, you lov'd me, sir,
Or seem'd to do, till having won from me
Confession of a love I feel no more,
You turn it to disdain. Oh think not, sir,
That by one little deed in love, like law,
You gain the full possession of my heart
For ever; and for this idle interview,
Do you so profit by it as to learn
Courtesy to a lady; which when learn'd
Come and repeat to me. [*Retires from window.*
Ces. And having now
Arraign'd me of the crime, why do you leave me
To plead my exculpation to the winds?
O Donna Anna, I call Heav'n to witness
'T was not my negligence, but my ill star
That envied me such ill-deserv'd delight.
If it be otherwise,
Or even you *suspect* it otherwise,

Digitized by Google

Spurn me, not only now, but ever, from you.
Since better were it with a conscience clear
Rejected, than suspiciously receiv'd.
The Prince has kept me all the night with him
About the city streets: your brother, who
Was with us, can bear witness. Yet if still
You think me guilty, but come back to say so,
And let me plead once more, and you once more
Condemn, and yet once more, and all in vain,
If you will only but come back again!

Anna (returning to the window). And this is true?

Ces. So help me Heav'n, it is!
Why, could you, Anna, in your heart believe
I could forget you?

Anna. And, Don Cesar, you
That, were it so, I could forget my love?
But see, the sun above the mountain-tops
Begins to peep, and morn to welcome him
With all her smiles and tears. We must begone.
I shall another quick occasion find,
When I shall call, and you — not lag behind?

Ces. Oh once more taken to your heart again,
My shame turns glory, and delight my pain.
Yet tell me —

Anna. Well?

Ces. Of your suspicions *one*
Lingers within you?

Digitized by Google

Anna. Ay, a legion,
That at your presence to their mistress' pride
Turn traitors, and all fight on Cesar's side!

Ces. Farewell then, my divine implacable!

Anna. Victim and idol of my eyes, farewell!

[*Exeunt severally.*

Laz. Well, and what has *my* mistress to say to me? Does she also play the scornful lady?

Elv. I? why?

Laz. Because my mistress' mistress does so to my master, whose love I follow in shadow.

Elv. Oh, I did not understand.

Laz. When he 's happy then I 'm jolly;
When he 's sad I 'm melancholy:
When he 's love-infected, I
With the self-same fever fretted,
Either am bound like him to fry,
Or if he chooses to forget it,
I must even take his cue,
And, Elvira, forget you.
Do you enact your lady. Now,
Begin. Be angry first —

Elv. But how?

Laz. Hide up, no matter how or why,
Behind the window-blind, while I
Underneath it caterwaul; —

Digitized by Google

Elv. What are the odds I don't reply?

Laz. Just the odds that I don't call.

SCENE III. *A Room in the Palace.— The* PRINCE *and* DON FELIX, *discovered at the back of the stage.*

Fel. Why is your Highness sad?

Prince. Not sad, Don Felix:
Oh would it were some certain shape of sorrow
That I might grapple with, not a vague host
Of undefin'd emotions! Oh how oft
The patching up of but a single seam
Opens a hundred others! Lucky he
Who can to disenchantment bare his eyes
Once and for all, and in oblivion
Shut up vain hope for ever!

Enter CESAR, ARIAS, *and* LAZARO, *in front.*

Ces. (to ARIAS *as they enter).* And so at last was satisfied.

Ar. His Highness and Don Felix.

Ces. I am sure that he who profits not by opportunity scarce covets it enough. Taking advantage of the cleared heaven, I have here written my lady, asking her when she will give me the meeting she promised; Lazaro, take the letter: Don Felix here, you can easily deliver it.

Digitized by Google

Laz. I 'll feign an errand, and so get into the house. [*Exit.*

Fcl. (to PRINCE). Cesar and Arias, my lord.

Prince. I know their business. Oh what a tempest does every breeze from that quarter raise in my bosom! Well, gentlemen?

Ar. Cesar, my lord, was telling me — [tell me.

Prince. About his melancholy studies still? Pray

Ces. Nay, my lord, all melancholy flies from the sunshine of your presence.

Prince. What then?

Ces. I still distrust myself; Don Arias must, my lord, answer for me.

Prince. Don Arias, then? [anew,

Ar. (aside). Fresh confidence should bind me his But comes too late.

Ces. (aside to ARIAS). Be careful what you say.

Ar. Trust me. (CESAR *retires.)*

Prince (to ARIAS *apart).* Well now, Don Arias.

Ar. At first much enraged against him, at last she yielded to his amorous excuses; and, finding Don Felix here, he has sent her a letter beseeching another meeting.

Prince. When?

Ar. This moment.

Prince. Who can doubt the upshot! I must contrive to thwart them. *(Aloud.)* But ere I hear your

Digitized by Google

story, Arias, I must tell Don Felix what I was about to do as these gentlemen came in and interrupted me: that his sister was ill — had fainted — from some vexation or fright, as I think.

Fel. Anna?

Prince. So my sister told me. Had you not better see to her?

Fel. With your leave, my lord. [*Exit.*

Prince (aside). And so, as I wished, prevent her answering, if not getting, the letter. *(Aloud.)* I will ask Nisida how it was. [*Exit.*

Ces. What did you tell the Prince to draw this new trouble on me?

Ar. Ay, even so. Blame him who has been even lying in your service. Look you now, the Prince told me he had overheard the names "Don Felix" and "Donna Anna" between us as we came in talking; and, tethered to that, I was obliged to drag this fainting fit into the service.

Ces. Oh, if Felix find Lazaro at his house!

Ar. Fear not, anxiety will carry him home faster than a letter Lazaro.

Ces. Alas that the revival of my joy
Is the revival of a fresh annoy;
And that the remedy I long'd to seize
Must slay me faster than the old disease.

[*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE IV. *An Apartment in* DON FELIX'S *house.*—DONNA ANNA *and* ELVIRA.

Elv. Well, have you finisht writing?
Anna. I have written,
Not finisht writing. That could never be;
Each sentence, yea, each letter, as I write it,
Suggesting others still. I had hop'd, Elvira,
To sum my story up in a few words;
Took pen and paper, both at the wrong end:—
Tried to begin, my mind so full I knew not
What to begin with; till, as one has seen
The fullest vessel hardly run, until
Some inner air should loose the lingering liquid,
So my charg'd heart waited till one long sigh
Set it a flowing. I wrote, eras'd, re-wrote,
Then, pregnant love still doubling thought on thought,
Doubled the page too hastily, and blotted
All that was writ before; until my letter,
Blotted, eras'd, re-written, and perplext,
At least is a fair transcript of my heart.
Well, the sum is, he is to come, Elvira,
To-night, when Felix, as I heard him say,
Goes to our country house on business;
And all will be more quiet. But here, read it.
Elv. My lord! my lord!—the letter!

Digitized by Google

Enter FELIX.

Anna (hiding the letter). Heavens!

Fel. Too well
The traitorous colour flying from your cheeks
Betrays your illness and my cause of sorrow.
What is the matter?

Anna. Nothing, brother.

Fel. Nothing!
Your changing face and your solicitude
To assure me there is nothing, but assure me
How much there is. I have been told in fact,
And hurried home thus suddenly,
To hear it all.

Anna (aside). Alas! he knows my secret!
Felix, indeed, indeed, my love
Shall not dishonour you.

Fel. Your love?
I 'm more at loss than ever. But perhaps
You feign this to divert me from the truth.
What is the matter, truly?

Anna. Be assur'd
I never will disgrace you.

Fel. Ah, she rambles,
Quite unrecover'd yet.

Anna (apart to ELVIRA). What shall I do?

Elv. (apart). Deny it all, there 's many a step
Suspicion and assurance. [between

Digitized by Google

Fel. You, Elvira,
(My sister cannot,) tell me what has happen'd ?
Elv. Oh, nothing but a swoon, sir :
My mistress fainted : that is all : accounts
For all her paleness and discomfiture.
Fel. 'T was that I heard.
Elv. I do assure you, sir,
We thought her dead — however she dissemble
Out of her love for you.
Fel. 'T was kind of her;
But yet not kindness, Anna, to delude me
Into a selfish ignorance of your pain.
Enough, you are better now ?
Anna. Indeed.
Fel. That 's well.
But, by the way, what meant you by "*your love*,"
And "*not dishonouring me*" ?
Anna. "*My love*," and "*not Dishonouring !*" did I say so ? I must mean,
My senses still half-drown'd, my love for you
That would not have you pain'd. A true love, Felix,
Though a mistaken, may be, as you say,
Yet no dishonour.
Fel. Still I have not heard
What caus'd this illness.
Anna (aside). He presses hard upon me,
But I 'll out-double him. *(Aloud.)* The cause of it ?

Digitized by Google

Why — sitting in this room,
I heard a noise in the street there: went to the window,
And saw a crowd of people, their swords out, fighting
Before the door; and (what will foolish fear
Not conjure up?) methought that one of them
Was you — and suddenly a mortal chill
Came over me, and — you must ask Elvira
For all the rest.

Elv. (aside). Why ever have the trouble
Of coining lies when truth will pass as well!

Enter LAZARO.

Laz. So far so good.

Fel. Lazaro?

Laz. (seeing FELIX). Is 't his ghost? for certainly I left his body at the palace.

Anna. My evil stars bear hard upon me!

Laz. I 'm done for, unless a good lie — *(Aloud.)* Ruffian, rascal, scamp!

Fel. How now?

Laz. Murderer! villain!

Fel. Softly, softly, breathe awhile! what's the matter?

Laz. Nothing, nothing, yet had I not exploded incidentally, or as it were superficially, I had altogether burst. Oh the rascal! the slave!

Fel. But tell me the matter.

Digitized by Google

Laz. Oh the matter — indeed the matter — you may well ask it — indeed you may — Oh the murderer!

Fel. Come, come, tell us.

Laz. Ay, well, look here, my lords and ladies, lend me your ears: I was at cards: yes: for you must know, my lord, I sometimes like a bout as my betters do: you understand this?

Fel. Yes — well?

Laz. Well, being at cards, as I say: ay, and playing pretty high too: for I must confess that sometimes, like my betters — you understand?

Fel. Go on — go on.

Laz. Well, being, as I said, at cards,
And playing pretty high too — mark me that —
I get into discussion or dispute
(Whichever you will call it) with a man,
If man he may be call'd who man was none —
Ye gods! to prostitute the name of men
On such as that! — call him a manikin,
A mandarin, a mandrake,
Rather than man — I mean in *soul*, mark you;
For in his outward man he was a man,
Ay, and a man of might. Nay, more than man,
A giant, one may say. Well, as I said,
This wretch and I got to high words, and then
(Whither high words so often lead) to blows;
Out came our swords. The rascal having seen

Digitized by Google

What a desperate fellow at my tool I was,
Takes him eleven others of his kidney,
Worse than himself, and all twelve set on me.
I seeing them come on, ejaculate,
"From all such rascals, single or in league,
Good Lord, deliver us," set upon all twelve
With that same sword, mark me, our gracious Prince
Gave me but yesternight, and, God be praised,
Disgrac'd not in the giving —
Beat the whole twelve of them back to a porch,
Where, after bandying a blow with each,
Each getting something to remember me by,
Back in a phalanx all came down on me,
And then dividing, sir, into two parties,
Twelve upon this side — do you see? and nine
On this — and three in front —

Fel. But, Lazaro,
Why, twelve and nine are twenty-one — and three —
Why, your twelve men are grown to twenty-four!
How 's this?

Laz. How 's this? why, counting in the shadows —
You see I count the shadows — twenty-four,
Shadows and all — you see![1]

Fel. I see.

[1] One cannot fail to be reminded of the multiplication of Falstaff's men in buckram, not the only odd coincidence between the two poets. Lazaro's solution of the difficulty seems to me quite worthy of Falstaff.

Digitized by Google

Laz. Well, sir,
Had not that good sword which our gracious Prince
Gave me but yesterday broke in my hand,
I should have had to pay for mass, I promise you,
For every mother's son of them!
Fel. Indeed?
But, Lazaro, I see your sword 's entire:
How 's that?
Laz. The most extraordinary part
Of all —
Fel. Well, tell us.
Laz. Why, I had first us'd
My dagger upon one: and when my sword
Snapt, with its stump, sir, daggerwise I fought,
As thus; and that with such tremendous fury,
That, smiting a steel buckler, I struck out
Such sparks from it, that, by the light of them,
Snatching up the fallen fragment of my sword,
I pieced the two together.
Fel. But the dagger [Lazaro,
You fought with first, and lost, you say — why,
'T is in your girdle.
Laz. I account for that
Easily. Look, sir, I drew it, as I said,
And struck amain. The man I drew it on,
Seeing the coming blow, caught hold of it,
And struck it back on me; I, yet more skilful,

Digitized by Google

With God's good help did so present myself
That, when he struck at me, my own dagger's point
Return'd into its sheath, as here you see it.
Enough, I heard the cry of "Alguazils!"
Ran off, and, entering the first open door,
Now ask for sanctuary at your feet.

Fel. I think it is your trepidation
Makes you talk nonsense.

Anna. Surely, my brother, this was the riot that so frighted me.

Fel. And was I then the man, "if man it could be called who man was none," that Lazaro fought with?

Anna. I know not, I only know 't was some one of a handsome presence like yours.

Fel. (aside). Perhaps his master — I much suspect it was Cesar that was dicing, and afterward fighting; and his servant, to cover him, invents this foolish story — *(Aloud.)* I will look into the street and see if it be clear. [*Exit.*

Elv. Now say your say.

Anna (giving LAZARO *her letter).* And quickly, Lazaro; taking this letter — [upon it.

Laz. (giving CESAR'S). And you this premium

Anna. Bid him be sure to come to me this evening; I have much to say. And thus much to you, Lazaro; your quarrel came in the nick of time to account for a swoon I had occasion to feign.

Digitized by Google

Elv. Quick! quick! he 's coming back.

Laz. Madam, farewell.

Anna. And if my plot succeed,
Feign'd quarrel shall to true love-making lead.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *A Room in the Palace;* CESAR *and* ARIAS *talking: to whom after a time enter* LAZARO.

Laz. Oh, I have had rare work.

Ces. The letter! *(takes it from* LAZARO.)

Ar. And how did all end?

Laz. Well — as I am home at last safe and sound.

Ces. Arias, you share my heart; even read my letter with me. *(They read.)*

Laz. (aside). That my master should trust that babbler who let out about my wooden sword to the Prince! my life upon 't, he 'll do the same to him; for he who sucks in gossip is the first to leak it.

Ar. Sweetly she writes!

Ces. How should it be but sweet,
Where modesty and wit and true love meet?

Ar. And expects you this evening!

Ces. Till which each minute is an hour, each hour
A day, a year, a century!

Laz. And then
In sæcula sæculorum. Amen.

Ar. The Prince!

Digitized by Google

Ces. I dread his seeing me.

Ar. But how?

Ces. Lest, as already twice, he thwart me now.

Enter PRINCE.

Prince. Cesar here, when I am on fire to know the upshot of my plot upon his letter! I must get quit of him.

Ces. Good day, my lord.

Prince. Well, any news abroad?

Ar. Not that I know of, my lord.

Prince. Cesar, there are despatches in my closet, have been lying there since yesterday, should they not be seen to at once?

Ces. My lord! *(Aside.)* I foresaw it.

Prince. Yes! I would have you look to them and report them to me directly.

Ces. (aside). Ah, this is better! *(Aloud.)* I 'll see to them. *(Aside.)* And then, I trust, day's work with daylight o'er,
Man, nor malicious star, shall cross me more.

[*Exeunt* CESAR *and* LAZARO.

Prince. And now about the letter?

Ar. I only know, my lord, that though Felix got home first, Lazaro got there somehow, somehow gave her the letter, and somehow got an answer.

Prince. Hast seen it?

Digitized by Google

Ar. Yes, my lord.

Prince. And —

Ar. She appoints another meeting this evening.

Prince. And I must myself despatch his work, so as to leave him free to-night! Oh, Arias, what can I do more?

Ar. Cannot your Highness go there yourself, and so at least stop further advancement?

Prince. True, true; and yet I know not; it might be too suspicious. I must consider what shall be done;
And what more subtle engine I may try
Against these lovers' ingenuity. [*Exeunt.*

ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Palace.*—PRINCE *and* DON ARIAS.

Ar. HOW well the night went off! did not the music,
The lights, the dances, and the ladies' eyes,
Divert your Grace's sadness?

Prince. Rather, Arias,
Doubled it.
Whithersoever Donna Anna mov'd,
My eyes, that ever followed hers along,
Saw them pursue Don Cesar through the crowd
And only rest on him; I curs'd him then,

Digitized by Google

And then excus'd him, as the judge should do
Whose heart is yearning with the guilt he damns.
Ar. Where will this passion end?
Prince. I think in death,
Led by the fatal secret you have told me.
Ar. I err'd, my lord; but all shall yet be well.
But hush! Don Cesar comes.
Prince. Make out of him
How sits the wind of love. Behind this screen
I 'll listen. *(Hides.)*

Enter CESAR.

Ar. Well, Don Cesar?
Ces. Nay, *ill*, Don Cesar!
Misfortune on misfortune! ev'n good fortune
Forswears her nature but to scowl on me!
Led by her letter, as the shades of night
Were drawing in, I went — not now to stand
Under her lattice with the cold, cold moon
For company, but in the very room
My lady warms and lightens with her presence!
There when we two had just begun to whisper
The first sweet words of love, upon a sudden,
As by some evil spirit prompted, her brother
Comes in, and on some frivolous pretext
Carries her to the palace. I suspect
He knows my purpose.

Digitized by Google

Ar. Nay—

Prince (listening). He little thinks
His evil spirit is so near him now.

Ces. Ay, and dead weary of these sicken'd hopes
And lost occasions, I have resolv'd to break
Through disappointment and impediment,
And turning secret love to open suit,
Secure at once her honour, and her brother's,
And my own everlasting happiness,
By asking her fair hand, 'fore all the world! [*Exit.*

Ar. You heard, my lord?

Prince (advancing). And if he ask her hand,
Felix will grant it as assuredly
As I would my own sister's! Oh, Don Arias,
What now?

Ar. Don Felix comes.

Prince. There 's yet one way,
He comes in time — Felix!

Enter FELIX.

Fel. My lord!

Prince. Come hither.
You came in time — were present in my thoughts
Before your coming. Hark you. I have long
Long'd to requite your many services,
By more substantial meed than empty breath,
Too oft, they say, the end of princes' favour.

Digitized by Google

Much I design for you; but in mean time,
As some foretaste and earnest of my love,
A kinsman, a near kinsman of my own,
Has set his heart upon the lady Anna,
Your sister; fain would have her hand in marriage:
And I, with your good liking,
Have promis'd it to him.

Fel. Oh, my good lord,
Your favour overpowers me!

Prince. Much content
Both for his sake, so near of my own blood,
(His letters show how deep his passion is,)
And yours, if you approve it.

Fel. Did I not,
Your will would be my law.

Prince. Why this is well then.
We 'll talk it over at our leisure; meanwhile,
For certain reasons, let this contract be
Between ourselves alone — you taking care
To pledge your sister's hand no other way.

Fel. O, trust to me, my lord — Heav'n watch above
Your Highness!

Prince (aside). Oh mad end of foolish love! [*Exit.*

Fel. I 'll straight away,
And tell my sister of the happiness
Awaits her. And may be shall learn of her
How my own suit prospers with Nisida,

Digitized by Google

The Prince's sister, which his present favour
Now blows upon so fairly. Cesar!

Enter CESAR.

Ces. Well found at last. Oh, Felix!
Fel. What is 't now?
Your heart seems labouring.
Ces. Yours must lighten it.
You know, Don Felix, how by blood and birth
I am a gentleman — not less, I trust,
In breeding and attainment; my estate
Sufficient for my birth — nurst by the Prince
In his own palace from my earliest years,
Until, howe'er unworthy of such honour,
Receiv'd into his inmost heart and counsel:
So far at least fitted for state affairs,
As ever given from my earliest youth
Rather to letters than to arms. Enough:
You know all this, and know, or ought to know,
How much I am your friend?
Fel. I do believe it.
Ces. Yea, Felix, and would fain that friendship knit
By one still closer tie — Have you not guess'd,
By many a sign more unmistakable
Than formal declaration, that I love —
Presumptuously perhaps — but that I love

Digitized by Google

One of your house. Which saying all is said:
For she is all your house who calls you "Brother."
Fel. Cesar, Heav'n knows how faithfully my heart
Answers to yours in all; how much I prize
The honour you would do me. Would to God
That I had seen the signs of love you talk of,
Pointing this way; there is, I do assure you,
No man in all the world to whom more gladly
I would ally my sister and myself;
But I did not. I grieve that it is so,
But dare not cancel what is now, too late,
Irrevocably agreed on with another.
Ces. By this "too late," I think you only mean
To tantalise my too late declaration.
If that be your intent, I am well punisht
Already; be content with my contrition.
You say you love me; and would well desire
To see me wed your sister; seal at once
My happiness, nor chill the opening day,
Nor my love's blossom, by a lingering "*Yea.*"
Fel. Indeed, indeed, my Cesar, not to revenge
Delay of speech, or insufficient token,
But with repeated sorrow I repeat,
My sister's hand is pledg'd beyond recall,
And to another; whom, for certain reasons,
I dare not name, not even to herself,
As yet—

Digitized by Google

Ces. If I survive, 't is that fate knows
How much more terrible is life than death!
Don Felix, you have well reveng'd yourself
Upon my vain ambition, speech delay'd,
And signs that you would not articulate;
But let my fate be as it will, may hers,
Hers, yea, and his whose life you link to hers,
Be so indissolubly prosperous,
That only death forget to envy them!
Farewell.

Fel. Farewell then: and remember, Cesar,
Let not this luckless business interrupt
Our long and loving intimacy.

Ces. Nay,
It shall not, cannot, Felix, come what may.

[*Exeunt severally.*

Enter PRINCE.

Prince. When in my love's confusion and excess
I fancy many a fond unlikely chance,
Desire grows stronger, resolution less,
I linger more the more I would advance.
False to my nobler self, I madly seize
Upon a medicine alien to my ill;
And feeding still with that should cure disease,
At once my peace and reputation kill
By turns, as the conflicting passions fire,
And chase each other madly through my breast,

Digitized by Google

I worship and despise, blame and admire,
Weep and rejoice, and covet and detest.
Alas! a bitter bargain he must choose,
Who love with life, or life with love, must lose!

Enter LAZARO.

Laz. Where can my master be? I shall go crazy, I think, running from room to room, and house to house, after him and his distracted wits.

Prince. Lazaro! Well, what news abroad?

Laz. Ah, my lord, there has been little of that under the sun this long while, they say. For instance, the slasht doublets just come into fashion, and which they call new; why 't was I invented them years ago.

Prince. You? how?

Laz. Why, look you; once on a time when I was not so well off as now, and my coat was out at elbows, the shirt came through: many saw and admired — and so it has grown into a fashion.

Prince. Who listens to you but carries away food for reflection! [*Exit.*

Laz. Aha! you are somewhat surfeited with that already, I take it.

So while the world her wonted journey keeps,
Lazarus chuckles while poor Dives weeps.

Enter CESAR.

Ces. Lazaro, I waited till the Prince was gone.

Digitized by Google

Listen to me. Don Felix has betroth'd
His sister to another, not to me;
He will not tell me whom, nor does it matter:
All ill alike. But out of this despair
I 'll pluck the crown that hope could never reach.
There is no time to lose; this very night
I 'll carry her away.

Laz. Only beware
Telling Don Arias what you mean to do.
Is 't possible you see not all along
Your secret playing on his faithless lips?
Here 's one last chance.

Ces. True, true.

Laz. You cannot lose
By secrecy — what gain by telling him?

Ces. You may be right: and to clear up the cause
Of past mischance, and make the future safe,
I 'll take your counsel.

Laz. Then hey for victory!
Meanwhile, sir, talk with all and trust in none,
And least of all in him is coming hither.
And then in ocean when the weary sun
Washes his swollen face, "there shall be done
A deed of dreadful note."

Enter ARIAS.

Ar. How now, Don Cesar?

Digitized by Google

Laz. (aside). Here are you, be sure,
When aught is stirring.

Ar. How speeds Love with you?

Laz. (aside). The lighter, sir, now you are left behind.

Ces. Arias, my friend! All 's lost!
The love I grew deep in my heart of hearts
Is wither'd at the moment of its blossom.
I went to Felix, ask'd his sister's hand:
It was betroth'd, he told me, to another:
I was too late. All 's lost! It were in vain
Weeping for that I never can attain:
I will forget what I must needs forego,
And turn to other —

Laz. (to ARIAS). Pray, sir, pardon me;
But pri'thee say no more to him just now;
It brings on such a giddiness.

Ar. Alas!
But can I be of service?

Laz. Only, sir,
By saying nothing more.

Ar. I am truly sorry. [*Exit.*

Laz. That you can lie no longer in the matter.
Oh, the Lord speed you!

Ces. O Love, if mortal anguish ever move thee,
At this last hour requite me with one smile
For all thy sorrows! let what I have suffer'd

Digitized by Google

Appease thy jealous godhead! I complain not
That you condemn my merits as too poor
For the great glory they aspire unto;
Yet who could brook to see a rival bear
The wreath that neither can deserve to wear!

Enter PRINCE *and* ARIAS.

Prince (to ARIAS). Even so?
Good. That he may not think 't was out of malice,
I made my business trench upon his love's,
Now that his love 's but Love-in-idleness,
I 'll occupy him still. Cesar!

Ces. My lord?

Prince. I had like to have forgot. 'T is Monday,
is 't not?
I have despatches both for Rome and Naples.
We must see to them to-night.

Ces. My lord!

Prince. Bring hither
Your writing.

Ces. (apart). Oh! the cup-full at my lips,
And dasht down, and for ever!
[*To* LAZARO.] Villain, the victory you told me of!

Laz. What fault of mine, sir?

Ces. What fault! said you not
All now was well?

Digitized by Google

Laz. Is 't I who make it wrong?

Ces. You meddled.

Prince. Are you ready?

Ces. Immediately.

Alas, alas! how shall my pen run clear
Of the thick fountain that is welling here!

Prince (aside). And I shall learn from you how
that dark pair
Contrive to smile, Jealousy and Despair.

[*Desk and papers brought in: exeunt* ARIAS *and* LAZARO.

Now, are you ready? (CESAR *sits at the desk.)*

Ces. Ay, my lord.

Prince. Begin then.

"I am secretly"—

Ces. "Secretly"— driven to madness!

Prince. "About the marriage"—

Ces. "Marriage"— that never shall take place!

Prince. "All is fair for you"—

Ces. "For you"— though perdition to me!

Prince. "Believe me"—

Ces. I shall not survive it!

Prince. "That Donna Anna of Castelvi"—

Ces. "That Donna Anna" — I can write no more!

Prince. "Is such in birth, beauty, and wit"—

Digitized by Google

Ces. Oh, my lord, pardon me; but may I know
This letter's destination!

Prince. Eh? to Flanders.
Why do you ask?

Ces. To Flanders! But, my lord,
Surely no Flemish courier leaves to-day.
Might not to-morrow —

Prince (aside). At the name of Anna
His colour chang'd. *(Aloud.)* No matter. 'T is begun,
And we 'll ev'n finish it. Where left I off?

Ces. (reading). "Can write no more"—

Prince. Eh? "Write no more?" Did I
Say that?

Ces. My lord?

Prince. The letter. Give me it.

Ces. (aside). Come what come may then, what is writ is writ!

Prince (reading). "I am secretly driven to madness about the marriage that never shall take place. All is fair for you, though perdition to me. Believe me I shall not survive it, that Donna Anna — I can write no more."
Was this what I dictated? [lord,

Ces. (throwing himself at the PRINCE'S *feet).* O my
O noble Alexander! if the service
You have so often prais'd beyond desert
Deserve of you at all, snatch not from me

Digitized by Google

The only crown I ever ask'd for it,
To gild a less familiar brow withal.
This lady, Donna Anna,
Whom you are now devoting to another,
Is mine, my lord; mine, if a two years' suit
Of unremitted love not unreturn'd
Should make her mine; which mine beyond dispute
Had long ere this have made her, had not I
How many a golden opportunity
Lost, from my love to spend it on my Prince!
And this is my reward! Oh, knew I not
How the ill star that rules my destiny
Might of itself dispose the gracious Prince,
Who call'd me for his friend from infancy,
To act my bitterest enemy unawares,
I might believe some babbler —

Prince. Nay, Don Cesar,
If in all these cross purposes of love
You recognise the secret hand of fate,
Accuse no mortal tongue, which could not reach
The stars that rule us all, wag as it would.
Enough. I am aggriev'd, and not, I think,
Unjustly, that without my pleasure, nay,
Without my knowledge even, you, my subject,
And servant, (leaving the dear name of friend,)
Dispos'd so of yourself, and of a lady
Whose grace my court considers as its own.

Digitized by Google

Give me the pen: and, as you write so laxly,
I must myself report —

Ces. My lord!

Prince. The pen. *(He writes.)*

Ces. If in misfortune's quiver there be left
One arrow, let it come!

Prince. You could not write,
Don Cesar; but perhaps can seal this letter:
'T is for Don Felix; send it to him straight.
Or stay — I 'd have it go by a sure hand:
Take it yourself directly.

Ces. At one blow
My love and friendship laid for ever low! [*Exit.*

Enter FELIX *and* ARIAS.

Ar. The letter must be written.

Prince. Oh, Don Felix,
I have this moment sent to you. No matter:
'T was but to say I have this instant heard
Your sister's bridegroom is in Parma; nay,
Perhaps already at your house.

Fel. Oh, my lord,
How shall I thank you for this gracious news?

Prince. Nay, we will hear them from your sister's lips.
To her at once.

[*Exit* FELIX.

Digitized by Google

And now, Don Arias,
You have to swear upon the holy cross
That hilts this sword, that neither Donna Anna
Know that I ever lov'd her, nor Don Cesar
I ever cross'd his love.

Ar. Upon this cross
I swear it; and beseech you in return
Never, my lord, to tell Don Cesar who
Reveal'd his secret.

Prince. Be it so. I promise.
And now to see whether indeed I dare
The laurel claim with him whose name I wear.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A Room in* FELIX'S *House.*— ANNA *and* ELVIRA.

Anna. Beside the charge of my own love, Elvira,
Whose crosses, I believe, will slay me soon,
My brother has confided to me at last,
His passion for the Princess Nisida;
And, for he knows that I am near her heart,
Would have me whisper it into her ears;
Which, were it such a passion as *I* feel,
His eyes would have reveal'd her long ago.
However, I have told her, and have got
An answer such — But look! he comes.

Digitized by Google

Enter FELIX.

Fel. Oh, sister,
Might but your news be half as good as mine!
A largess for it, come. You are betroth'd,
By me, and by the Prince himself, to one
In all ways worthy of you, and who long
Has silently ador'd.

Anna (aside). Is it possible?
Cesar! *(Aloud.)* Well, ask the largess that you will.

Fel. The Princess —

Anna. Well?

Fel. What says she?

Anna. All she could
At the first blush — nothing — and that means all:
Go to her, and press out the lingering Yes
That lives, they say, in silence.

Fel. Oh, my sister!
But who comes here?

Enter CESAR *and* LAZARO.

Ces. (giving the letter). I, Felix. This must be
My warrant — from the Prince. Oh misery!

Fel. I thank you, Cesar. *(Reads.)*
"Because happiness is the less welcome when anticipated, I have hitherto withheld from you, that he to whom I have engaged your sister's hand, is — Don

Digitized by Google

Cesar! in whom unite all that man or woman can desire. If the man lives who can deserve such glory it is he. Farewell."

Ces. Great Heav'n!

Fel. Nay, read the letter.

Enter PRINCE, NISIDA, ARIAS, *and Train.*

Prince. He shall not need,
Myself am here to speak it.

Ces. (kneeling). Oh, my lord!

Prince. Rise, Cesar. If your service, as it did,
Ask'd for reward, I think you have it now;
Such as not my dominion alone,
But all the world beside, could not supply.
Madam, your hand; Don Cesar, yours. I come
To give away the bride:
And after must immediately away
To Flanders, where, by Philip's trumpet led,
I will wear Maestricht's laurel round my brows;
Leaving meanwhile Don Felix Governor
Till my return — by this sign manual.
(Puts NISIDA'S *hand in* FELIX'S.)

Fel. My lord, my lord!

Laz. Elvira?

Elv. Lazaro?

Laz. I must be off. Our betters if we ape,
And they ape marriage, how shall we escape?

Digitized by Google

Ar. And learn this moral. None commend
A secret ev'n to trustiest friend:
Which secret still in peril lies
Even in the breast of the most wise;
And at his blabbing who should groan
Who could not even keep his own?

There are three other plays by Calderon, on this subject of keeping one's love secret; a policy, whose neglect is punisht by a policy characteristically Spanish. 1. *Amigo, Amante, y Leal;* which has the same Prince and Arias, only the Prince confides his love to his rival. 2. *El Secreto a Voces;* where it is the ladies who shuffle the secret about the men. And 3. *Basta Callar,* a more complicated intrigue than any.

Digitized by Google

GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

GIL. PEREZ.
ISABEL, *his sister.*
DON ALONSO, } *his two Friends.*
MANUEL MENDEZ, }
PEDRO, } *Servants in his house.*
CASILDA, }

DONNA JUANA, *a Portuguese lady.*
JUAN BAPTISTA, *a Lover of Isabel.*
THE LORD HIGH ADMIRAL OF PORTUGAL.
DONNA LEONOR, *his Cousin.*
A SHERIFF.
A JUDGE.
LEONARDO, *a Traveller.*

ALGUAZILS, OFFICERS, ATTENDANTS, FARMERS, &C.

Digitized by Google

GIL PEREZ, THE GALLICIAN.

(Luis Perez el Gallego.)

ACT I.

SCENE I. *Outside* GIL PEREZ'S *House.— Enter* PEDRO *running; and* GIL PEREZ *after him with a drawn dagger; and* ISABEL *and* CASILDA *interceding.*

Isab. FLY, Pedro, fly!
Gil. And what the use his flying
If I be after him?
Ped. Hold him! hold him back,
Both of you!
Gil. By the Lord! I 'll do for him.
Isab. But why so savage with him?
Gil. He must pay
The long arrear of mischief you 've run up.

Digitized by Google

Isab. I understand you not.

Gil. I 'll kill him first,
And then explain.

Isab. I, who dread not bodily violence,
Dread your injurious words. What have I done
That you should use me thus? — my enemy,
And not my brother.

Gil. You say well your enemy,
Who, if you do as you have done so long,
Will one day bathe his sword in your heart's blood,
And after in his own, and so wipe out
One scandal from the world.

Ped. As the good soul
Who meddles to make peace between two brawlers
Oft gets the bloody nose, I 'll take the hint.
Farewell, fair Spain! for evermore farewell!

Gil. Here! hark you, sir;
Before you go; you have escap'd this time
By luck, not by desert. I give you warning,
Keep from my sight: for if I see your face
Fifty years hence, among the antipodes,
I 'll pay you off.

Ped. Pray don't disturb yourself;
I 'll take you at your word, and straight be off
To some old friends of mine — indeed relations —
In central Africa — the Ourang Outangs:

Digitized by Google

A colony so distant as I trust
Will satisfy us both. And so, good bye.
[*Exit;* CASILDA *after him.*
Isab. He 's gone, poor fellow.
And now perhaps, sir, as we are alone,
You 'll tell me why you do affront me thus.
Gil. Sister — oh, would to God that I had none
To call by such a name at such expense!
And can you think that I have been so blind,
As well as dumb, not to be ware the tricks
Of the sly gentleman who follows you
So constantly, and who, if this goes on,
Will one day filch away, not your own only,
But the long garner'd honour of our house?
Why, I have seen it all from first to last,
But would not show my teeth till I could bite;
Because, in points like this, a man of honour
Speaks once, and once for all.
This once is now. I 'll speak my mind to you;
Which, if you cannot understand, to-morrow
I must repeat in quite another language.
I know your man — Juan Baptista — one
Not man enough for me, and so, I tell you,
Not for my sister. This should be enough,
Without his being, as he is, a Jew.
To get you from his reach I brought you here
To Salvatierra, deep amid the mountains,

Digitized by Google

And safe enough I thought; but even here
His cursed letters reach you through the hands
Of that fine rascal I have just pack'd off.
There; I have told my story; take 't to heart;
Dismiss your man at once, or, by the Lord,
If you and he persist, I 'll fire his house,
And save the Inquisition that much trouble.

Isab. Your anger makes you blind — accusing me
Of things I never did.

Gil. You never did!

Isab. But so it is, poor women must submit
To such insinuations.

Gil. Pray, was 't I
Insinuated that letter then?

Isab. Peace, peace!
I can explain it all, and shall, when fit.
What would you have of me? You are my brother,
And not my husband, sir; consider that:
And therefore, in fraternal kindness bound,
Should even take my word without ado.
You talk of honour: is not honour then
Slow to suspect — would rather be deceived
Itself than prematurely to accuse?
I am your sister, Perez, and I know
My duty towards you and myself. Enough —
Which, if you cannot understand, to-morrow
I must repeat in quite another language. [*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

Gil. She says not ill; it better were indeed
Had I kept on the mask a little longer,
Till they had dropt theirs beyond all denial.
She 's right, and I was wrong; but from this time
I 'll steer another course.

Enter CASILDA.

Cas. A gentleman
(Of Portugal, he says) is at the door,
And asks for you.
Gil. Bid him come in. Away,
My troubles, for a while! [*Exit* CASILDA.

Enter MANUEL MENDEZ.

Man. 'T was well, Gil Perez,
You sent so quickly, or my impetuosity
Had overrun your leave.
Gil. What, Manuel Mendez!
Come to my arms. What! you in Salvatierra?
Man. And, I assure you, at no small expense
Of risk and heart-ache.
Gil. That 's unwelcome news.
Man. Not when 't is all forgotten in the joy
Of seeing you again.
Gil. I shall not rest
Till I have heard; ill-manner'd though it be

Digitized by Google

To tax a man scarce winded from a journey
With such expense of breath.
Man. Then listen, Gil.
You, I am sure, remember (time and absence
Cannot have washt so much from memory)
The pleasant time when you were last at Lisbon,
And grac'd my house by making it your home.
I need not tell of all we did and talk'd,
Save what concerns me now; of the fair lady
You knew me then enamour'd of, (how deeply
I need not say — being a Portuguese,
Which saying, all is said) — Donna Juana,
At whose mere name I tremble, as some seer
Smit with the sudden presence of his God.
Two years we lived in the security
Of mutual love, with so much jealousy
(Without which love is scarcely love at all)
As serv'd to freshen up its sleeping surface,
But not to stir its depths. Ah, dangerous
To warm the viper, or, for idle sport,
Trust to the treacherous sea — sooner or later
They turn upon us; so these jealousies
I lik'd to toy with first turn'd upon me;
When suddenly a rich young cavalier,
Well grac'd with all that does and ought to please,
(For I would not revenge me with my tongue
Upon his name, but with my sword in 's blood,)

Digitized by Google

Demanded her in marriage of her father;
Who being poor, and bargains quickly made
'Twixt avarice and wealth, quickly agreed.
The wedding day drew nigh that was to be
The day of funeral too — mixt dance and dirge,
And grave and bridal chamber both in one.
The guests were met; already night began
Loose the full tide of noisy merriment,
When I strode in; straight through the wedding throng
Up to the bride and bridegroom where they were,
And, seizing her with one hand, with the other
Struck him a corpse; and daring all, to die
Fighting, or fighting carry off my prize,
Carried her off; lifted her on a horse
I had outside; struck spur; and lightning-like
Away, until we reach'd the boundary
Of Portugal, and, safe on Spanish ground,
At last drew breath and bridle. Then on hither,
Where I was sure of refuge in the arms
Of my old friend Gil Perez; whom I pray
Not so much on the score of an old friendship,
So long and warm, but as a fugitive
Asking protection at his generous hands —
A plea the noble never hear in vain.
Nor for myself alone, but for my lady
Who comes with me, and whom I just have left
Under the poplars by the river-side,

Digitized by Google

Till I had told my news, and heard your answer.
A servant whom we met with on the way,
Pointed your house out — whither, travel-tir'd,
Press'd for my life, and deep in love with her
I bring, as curst by those I left behind,
And trusting him I come to —
Gil. Tut, tut, tut!
Go on so, I 'll not answer you at all;
All this fine talk to me! from Manuel Mendez!
As if 't were not enough to say, "Friend Gil,
I 've left a gentleman I slew behind,
And got a living lady with me, so
Am come to visit you." Why go about
With phrases and fine speeches? I shall answer
Quite unpolitely thus, "Friend Manuel,
This house of mine is yours — for months, for years,
For all your life, with all the service in 't
That I or mine can do for you." So back,
And bring your lady, telling her from me
I stay behind because I am unapt
At such fine speeches as her lover makes.
Man. Oh, let me thank you —
Gil. Nay, 't were better far
Go to your lady; who may be ill at ease
Alone in a strange place. [*Exit* MANUEL.
What, Isabel! *(She enters.)*
Isabel, if my former love and care

Digitized by Google

Deserve of you at all, forget awhile
All difference, (for there 's a time for all,)
And help me now to honour an old friend
To whom I owe great hospitalities ;
Manuel Mendez, who with his bride is come
To be my guest.

Isab. I 'll do my best for you.
But hark ! what noise ? *(Shouts and fighting within.)*

Gil. A quarrel 's up somewhere.

Voice within. Take him alive or dead.

Another voice. He 'll slip us yet !

Isab. Some one on horseback flying at full speed
From his pursuers.

Voices within. Fire upon him ! fire ! *(Shots within.)*

Isab. Mercy, he 's dead !

Gil. Not he ; only his horse ;
And see he 's up again, and gallantly
Flashing his sword around on his pursuers
Keeps them at bay, and fighting, fighting, still
Retreats —

Isab. And to our house too —

Enter DON ALONSO.

Alon. Shelter ! shelter !
In pity to a wretched man at last
Foredone !

Gil. What, Don Alonso !

Digitized by Google

Alon. But a moment,
To ask you cover my retreat, Gil Perez;
My life depends on reaching Portugal.

Gil. Away then to the bridge you see below there.
God speed you.

Alon. And keep you! [*Exit.*

Voices without. This way! this way!

Gil. But just in time!

Enter SHERIFF *with Officers.*

Officer. I 'm sure he pass'd by here.

Gil. Well, gentlemen, your business?

Sher. Don Alonso —
Came he this way?

Gil. He did, and he went that,
And must almost, unless I much mistake,
Be got to Portugal. For, by the Lord, sir,
His feet seem'd feather'd with the wind!

Sher. Away then!
After him!

Gil. Stop a moment!

Sher. Stop! what mean you?

Gil. Just what I say. Come, Mr. Sheriff, come,
You 've done your duty; be content with that;
And don't hunt gentlemen like wolves to death;
Justice is one thing, and fair play 's another,
All the world over.

Digitized by Google

Sher. When I 've got my man
I 'll answer you.
Gil. Perhaps before.
Sher. Why, sir,
Would you detain me ?
Gil. Why, if logic fails,
I must try other argument.
Sher. As what, sir ?
Gil. Why, mathematical. As how ? Look here.
You see me draw this line. Well then, 'fore God,
The man who passes it — dies. Q. E. D.
Sher. Down with him !
Gil. Back, I advise you.
Voices. Down with him !
Gil. Chicken-hearts ! Curs ! Oh, you will down with me,
Will you indeed ? and this the way you do it ?
(He fights with them.)
One. Oh, I am slain.
Sher. I 'm wounded.
Gil. Back with you !
[*Exit, driving them in.*

SCENE II. *The River-side.—Enter* JUANA *and* MANUEL.

Jua. Oh never did I owe more to your love,
Than for this quick return.

Digitized by Google

Man. O my Juana,
The love such beauty as your own inspires,
Surmounts impossibilities. However,
I needed not go on to Salvatierra,
Lighting on what I look'd for by the way,
Among the mountains; where my friend Gil Perez
(Whose honour I insult if I declare it)
Has pitcht his tent, with hospitality
Prophetic of our coming;
So peaceably our love may fold its wings
Under the shadow of my friend's.
Jua. Oh, Manuel,
She who has left home, country, friends, and fame,
And would contentedly leave life, for you,
Desires no other temple of her love
Than a bleak rock, whose unchang'd stedfastness
Shall not out-wear her own.
Alon. (within). I can no more!
Jua. Listen! What noise is that?
Man. A cavalier
Still with his sword in his exhausted hand.
He falls!

Enter ALONSO, *who falls at the side.*

Alon. They e'en must have me.
Man. Courage, sir.
Wounded? *(Voices within).*

Digitized by Google

Alon. Hark! the bloodhounds are close by;
And worse, they must have slain Gil Perez first,
Who else —

Enter GIL.

Gil. Confound the rogues, they 've got the bridge
And the way to 't, and heav'n itself, I think,
To fight upon their side.

Man. Gil, what is this?

Gil. Trying to help a friend out of a ditch,
I 've tumbled in myself.

Man. Come, we are two
In hand, and one in heart; at least can fight
And die together.

Alon. Nay, add me;
The cause —

Gil. There 's but a moment. Manuel,
I charge you by your friendship,
Draw not your sword to-day.

Man. Not I my sword
When theirs are on you?

Jua. (clinging to MANUEL). Heav'ns!

Voices (within). This way! this way!

Man. They 're coming.

Gil. (to ALONSO). Listen! you can swim?

Alon. Alas —

Gil. I mean upon my shoulders. Manuel,
We two shall cross to Portugal,

Digitized by Google

Where follow us they may, but cannot seize us.
Meanwhile I leave you master of my house
And honour, centred (no time to say more)
In Isabel, my sister. Swear to me
That you will see to this.

Man. I swear it, Gil. [sir!

Gil. Enough, your hand! Adieu! Now, courage,

(Takes ALONSO *on his shoulders and plunges into the river.)*

Jua. The man swims like a dolphin.

Gil (within). Manuel,
Remember!

Man. How he wrestles with the flood!
And now is half-way over.

Gil (within). Manuel,
Remember! I have trusted all to you.

Man. Waste not your breath. I 'll do 't.

Gil (within). Adieu!

Man. Adieu!

[*Exit* MANUEL *with* JUANA.

SCENE III. *The Portuguese bank of the River.—Enter the* ADMIRAL *of Portugal and* DONNA LEONOR *as from hunting.*

Adm. Since summer's fiery Sirius, fair cousin,
Neither from place nor power in heaven declines,
Will you not rest?

Digitized by Google

Leonor. Ah, what a noble sport
Is hunting! who so abject spirited
As not to love its generous cruelty?
Adm. It is indeed a noble imitation
Of noblest war. As when a white-tuskt boar
Holds out alone against the yelling pack,
Gores one, o'erthrows another, all the while
Bristling his back like to some living quiver:
While many a gallant hound, foil'd in his onset,
Tears his own flesh in disappointed rage,
Then to the charge again — he and his foe,
Each with redoubled fury firing up:
A chivalry that nature has implanted
Ev'n in the heart of beasts.
Leonor. So in falconry,
That I love even better; when the heron
Mounts to the wandering spheres of air and fire,
Pois'd between which alternately she burns
And freezes, while two falcons, wheeling round,
Strive to out-mount her, tilting all along
The fair blue field of heaven for their lists;
Until out-ris'n and stricken, drencht in blood,
Plumb down she falls like to some crimson star;
A rivalry that nature has implanted
Ev'n in the breast of birds.

Digitized by Google

Enter PEDRO.

Ped. Which is the way, I wonder? What with fright and weariness, I must rest awhile. Well, this is Portugal, where to be sure a poor Spanish pimp may hope to escape ferocious honour. That I should lose a post where others make their thousands at my first function! But who are these? Fine folks too! Pray Heaven they be in want of an officer.

Adm. A horse will soon carry you to the villa. Hark you, sir! (*To* PEDRO.)

Ped. My lord!

Adm. Who are you?

Ped. Nay, how should I know?

Adm. But are you one of my people?

Ped. Yes, if you like it. As said Lord Somebody, who neither serv'd king, man, or God, but who, entering the palace one day at supper-time, and seeing all the chamberlains at work without their coats, whips off his, and begins carrying up dishes. Suddenly in comes the major-domo, who, perceiving a stranger, asks if he be sworn of the service. "Not yet," says he, "but if swearing is all that 's wanted, I 'll swear to what you please." So 't is with me. Make me your servant, and I 'll swear and forswear anything.

Adm. You are liberal of your humour.

Ped. 'T is all I have to be liberal of; and it would not be right to spare that.

Digitized by Google

Gil (within). Hold on, hold on!

Leonor. Who 's that?

Adm. Look, some one with erect head and vigorous arms, buffeting the wave before him.

Leonor. With another on his shoulders too.

Adm. (to PEDRO). Now, would you win an earnest of future favour, plunge in to his assistance.

Ped. I would, sir, but I 'm a wretched swimmer.

Leonor. They have reacht the shore at last.

Enter GIL PEREZ *and* ALONSO, *drencht.*

Alon. Thank Heaven for our escape!

Gil. Ah, we 're well quit of it.

Ped. Now, sir, if I can help. But Lord ha' mercy! *(Sees* GIL.)

Adm. What! going just when you are wanted?

Ped. I was born, my lord, with a tender heart; that seeing these poor fellows so drencht, bleeds for them. That he should pursue me even to Portugal!

(Is creeping away.)

Adm. What! only just come, and going?

Ped. Oh, my lord, a sudden call. Excuse me.

[*Exit.*

Adm. 'T is an idiot. But let me help you.

Alon. My life is in your hand.

Adm. In my hand? How is that?

Alon. You shall hear, if I may first know to

Digitized by Google

whom I tell my story. Misfortune forces me to be cautious.

Adm. You are right; but need fear nothing from the Lord High Admiral of Portugal, who now speaks to you, and pledges himself to protect you so long as you stand on his estate.

Alon. Enough, my lord,
My name is Don Alonso de Tordoya,
Not un-illustrious in Spain. I love
A noble lady; whom going to visit,
When this same westering sun was young in heav'n,
I found a rival with her. I rush'd out,
Bidding him follow with his sword; he follow'd;
We fought, and with two passes in his side
I left him dead; the cry was after us;
The officers of justice at my heels.
No time to lose; I leap'd upon a horse,
And rode, until a shot, aim'd at his rider,
Kill'd him; then, taking to my feet, fled on,
Till, coming to a country house, I saw,
To my great joy, my friend —

Gil. Here enter I;
Who, seeing Don Alonso so hard set,
Offer'd my services to keep them back
Till he was safe in Portugal.
That country house of mine — a pleasure house
Some call it, though I 've found but little there —

Digitized by Google

Stands in a narrow mountain gorge, through which
He and the bloodhounds after him must pass
To reach the river; as he says, he came,
And saw, and fled; had scarce got fifty yards,
Up comes the sheriff with his yelling pack
Panting and blowing. First most courteously
I begg'd them spare themselves as well as him
Further pursuit, but all in vain; push on
They would; whereon I was oblig'd to draw;
Disabled four or five, Heav'n help their souls;
Till, having done as much as he to figure
In justice's black book, like him I fled
After him to the river; where on finding
The bridge occupied by the enemy,
Catching my sword between my teeth, and him
Upon my shoulders, I so dash'd in,
And, at last, over; where now, thanks to Heav'n,
We meet your Excellency, who vouchsafes
Your shelter and protection.

Adm. 'T was my word,
And I 'll abide by 't.

Alon. I have need
Of all assurance, for the man I slew
Was of great note.

Adm. His name?

Alon. Prefacing that he was a cavalier
Of wholly noble parts and estimation,

Digitized by Google

And that 't is no disparagement to valour
To be unfortunate, I may repeat it,—
Don Diego d'Alvarado.
Adm. Wretched man!
My cousin! you have slain him!
Leonor. You have slain
My brother, traitor!
Gil. Oh, I see my sword
Must e'en be out again.
Alon. Your Excellency
Will pause before he draws his sword on one
Surrender'd at his feet. My lord, remember
I slew Don Diego in the face of day,
In fair and open duel. And, beside,
Is not your Excellency's honour pledg'd,
To my security?
Gil. Beside all which,
I say that if all Portugal, and all
Within it, admiralty and army too,
Combine, you shall not touch him while I live.
Adm. I know not what to do; upon one side
My promise, on the other the just call
Of retribution for my kinsman's death.
I must adjudge between them. Don Alonso,
The word of Honour is inviolable,
But not less so her universal law.
So long as you stand upon ground of mine

Digitized by Google

I hold your person sacred: for so far
My promise holds; but set your foot beyond
E'en but an inch — remember, death awaits you.
And so farewell.

Leonor. Nay, hold! though you have pledged
Your promise —

Adm. What I pledge is pledg'd for you,
As for myself; content you.

[*Exeunt* ADMIRAL *and* LEONOR.

Alon. Well, friend Gil,
What say you to all this?

Gil. Why then, I say,
At least 't is better than it was. To-day
The mouse, shut in the cupboard, there must stay:
But will jump out to-morrow — if she may.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Wood near San Lucar in Andalusia.— Enter* MANUEL *and* JUANA *as travelling.*

Man. MISFORTUNE on misfortune!

Jua. Ay, they call
One to another.

Man. Ah, my love!
That you should wander thus about with me

Digitized by Google

And find no home! Gallicia, that I thought
Should be our port, unkindly storm'd us out
To Salvatierra, whence before the gale
We drive to Andalusia.

Jua. Manuel,
My home is ever where you are.

Man. Oh how
Requite such love! but you shall rest awhile
Till I and the poor fellow we pick'd up
Have found fit resting-place in San Lucar.
Pedro!

Enter PEDRO.

Ped. Sir!

Man. Come you with me;
While you, Juana, underneath those trees —

Jua. Weep your departure. [*Exit* JUANA.

Man. It shall not be long.
Although her grief blindly anticipates
A longer separation than she knows!

Ped. Alas, and how is that? and how can you
Foredoom such pain to one who loves you so?
Pardon me who am but your servant, sir,
And that but these two days, for saying it.

Man. Ah, Pedro, 't is not I who wills all this,
But fate; that, stronger than all human will,
Drove me from Portugal to Gallicia,
Thence hither; where my fate still urging on,

Digitized by Google

I must to sea, joining the armament
That sails to plant the banner of the church
Over the golden turrets of the north:
Leaving my lady — not, as you surmise,
Deserted and dishonour'd here behind,
But in some holy house at San Lucar,
With all the little substance I possess,
Till I return. For to a soldier
His sword is property enough. *(Drums within.)*

Ped. And hark
The drum that answers you —

Man. No doubt a troop
Recruiting for this war.

Ped. See, they are coming.

Man. I 'll take occasion by the forelock then.
Pedro, go, tell the Ensign of the troop
Two men would join his ranks. I 'll to Juana.

[*Exit.*

Enter GIL PEREZ *with soldiers.*

Ped. This one looks affable. *(To a Soldier.)* Pray, sir, can you courteously inform me which is the

Soldier. There — he with the red sash. [Ensign ?

Ped. What, he with the lofty presence and broad shoulders ?

Soldier. Ay !

Gil (to the soldiers). Well, then, my lads, we shall agree together very well, eh ?

Digitized by Google

Soldiers. Long live our noble Ensign!

[*Exeunt soldiers.*

Ped. Now 's the time!

Gil (to himself). 'Fore heaven, this soldiering would be pleasant enough did not that trouble follow and plague me.

Ped. Sir!

Gil. Leaving Isabel at such a risk —

Ped. Sir Ensign!

Gil. That as fast as I gain honour here I run the chance of losing more at home.

Ped. Noble Sir Ensign!

Gil. One good thing, however, my good Manuel keeps guard for me.

Ped. He must surely be deaf this side — I 'll try the other. Noble Ensign!

Gil (turning round). Who is that?

Ped. (recognising him gradually). A soldier — no, I only mean one who would be — no soldier. If I said I wish'd to be a soldier, sir, I lied.

Gil. Rascal! you here? did I not warn you whenever and wherever —

Ped. Oh, yes, yes, but how should I ever expect to find you here a soldiering?

Gil (setting upon him). I 'll teach you I *am* here, scoundrel, to whom I owe half my trouble.

Ped. Help! murder! help!

Digitized by Google

Enter MANUEL.

Man. A soldier set upon my servant! stop, sir! how do you dare — Gil Perez!

Gil. Manuel!

Man. Why, did I not leave you in Portugal?

Gil. And I you in Salvatierra, engaged to me by solemn promise and old love to guard my honour there?

Man. We both have cause for wonder. I will tell you all; but first we must be alone.

Gil. Ay, another wonder; this fellow yours?

Man. In travelling hither we found him by the way, and took him.

Gil (to PEDRO). Well, this saves your life for this time, sir; but, remember, you will not always have a friend at hand to do so much for you.

Ped. I know that; I only wish you would be so gracious as to tell me where you are next bound, that I may take good care not to go thither. But I know one place at least to which you cannot follow me — your own estate — and thither I set off immediately. [*Exit.*

Gil. We are alone. Come, I will tell you first
My story. As you say you saw us last,
Alonso and myself, in Portugal;
Such an escape as (so the wise men say)
Is from the frying-pan into the fire.

Digitized by Google

We landing from the river on the estate
Of that great potentate the High Admiral,
Whose cousin, it turn'd out, was the very man
Alonso slew; whereat the Admiral,
Who had, before he knew this, promis'd us
Protection, gave us truly such protection
As the cat gives the mouse that she thinks safe
Under her paw. But we escap'd from her,
And after much adventure came at last
To San Lucar here, where the Duke, who now
Is general of the war that our good king
Wages with England, courteously receiv'd us;
Gave Don Alonso a regiment; made me
An Ensign in it as you see; enough —
I know you will not wish a longer story
From one whose heart, until you tell him yours,
Hangs from a hair.

Man. To take the story up then
Where you did, Perez — scarcely had you plung'd
Into the river, than the sheriff's rout
Came after you; but, seeing all was lost,
Went angry to their homes, and I to yours;
Where I receiv'd such hospitality
As our old friendship — But I falter here,
Scarce knowing how to tell —
Nay, almost doubting if to tell at all,
Or to conceal, what to conceal and tell

Digitized by Google

At once were best. You made me promise, Gil,
At parting — yea, with those last parting words
Wrung from your breathless struggle with the flood—
To watch the honour of your house.
I did so; and it is because I did so
That I was forc'd to leave it.
Gil. Manuel,
Your tongue is slaying me by syllables.
But tell me all — How was 't?
Man. One Juan Baptista
Courted your sister.
Gil. Well?
Man. And came at last
To such a boldness, that one night he stole
Into the house.
Gil. Manuel!
Man. I, who was watching,
Ran from my chamber, found a muffled man;
Threw myself on him; he, alerter yet,
Leap'd from the window, and I after him
Into the street, where two he'd posted there
Came to his rescue; one of them I slew,
The other wounded, while the rogue himself
Fled and escap'd. What could I do, my friend,
A foreigner, charg'd with a homicide
In a strange country, with Juana too
Involv'd with me? If I were wrong to fly,

Digitized by Google

I did so thinking how yourself would act
In a like case.

Gil. 'T is true, I cannot blame you.
Ah! he said truer may be than he meant,
Who liken'd a true friend to a true mirror,
That shows one all oneself indeed, but all
Revers'd; that when I look into your breast
To see my honour, I but see disgrace
Reflected there. I must begone at once
To Salvatierra; for, to leave my name
In danger is to let it run to shame.

Enter ALONSO.

Oh, Don Alonso, you are come in time.
If aught that I have ever done for you
Deserve return, requite me, I beseech you,
By giving Manuel here the Ensigncy
I must throw up.

Alon. But why?

Gil. I must at once
To Salvatierra, where my honour lies
In the utmost peril.

Alon. But —

Gil. I am resolv'd.

Alon. I fain might try dissuade you, but I know
Your honour will not call in vain. Enough:
Be 't as you will — on one condition.

Digitized by Google

Gil. Well?

Alon. That I may go with you, and share your risk,
Who more than shar'd, and conquer'd mine.

Man. Nay, sir,
If any one do that it must be I,
His older friend, who bringing this ill news
Must see him safely through it.

Alon. But 't was I
Who drew him from his home, where, till I came,
He liv'd in peace and quiet, but where now
This outrage has grown up in his forc'd absence.
And surely, the world over, 't is ill manners
For one who, having drawn a friend from home,
Lets him return alone.

Man. Well, be you courteous,
I 'll not be cowardly.

Gil. Oh, this rivalry
Proves the nobility of both! But, friends,
Neither must go with me; you both are here
Fled in like peril of your lives from home,
And how could I avail me of your love
At such a price? Nay, I may want you both
In greater risks hereafter; and whom look to,
If you be lost?

Alon. True, but if one of us
Went with you now, the other —

Digitized by Google

Man. And that one
Must be myself.
Alon. You see, sir, one *will* go.
Do you choose which.
Man. Content.
Gil. How shall I choose,
When to choose one must needs the other hurt!
But if it needs must be —
I say that Don Alonso, so engag'd
In high and even holy business here,
Must not forego 't for mine. If one will come,
Let it be Manuel.
Alon. I live to hear
This insult from your lips! But I 'll have vengeance;
Neither shall go unless you take with you
Thus much at least to compensate
For what you leave. These jewels may assist you
Where my sword cannot. *(Giving jewels.)*
Gil. I accept them, sir,
As freely as they 're given. Come, embrace me.
And now to punish an unworthy sister,
And that ill traitor, from whose heart I swear
My bleeding honour with this sword to tear.

Digitized by Google

SCENE II. *Outside* GIL PEREZ'S *House at Salvatierra; as in* ACT I., SCENE I.—*Enter* ISABEL *and* CASILDA.

Isab. What! Donna Leonor d'Alvarado, come to Salvatierra?

Cas. Yes.

Isab. And for what purpose?

Cas. They say, to avenge her brother's death. I myself have seen her conferring with Juan Baptista.

Isab. And what do you infer from that?

Cas. He is, they say, chief witness against Don Alonso and your brother, for this murder.

Isab. Against my brother too! O Casilda, is it not shameful that Juan Baptista should revenge with slanders behind my brother's back whom he dares not meet face to face! Nay, that a traitor be revenged at all on him he has betrayed! thriving here at home while my brother is banisht!

Cas. But there 's something else. He charges your brother's friend Manuel with murdering his men.

Isab. In proving which, my honour must be publicly canvassed and compromised!

Enter PEDRO.

Ped. Oh, what a long way it has seemed; as it will when fear fetters one's legs. Oh, permit me, madam,

Digitized by Google

since fate has sent me back to your feet, to kiss but the little toe, the pink, the pearl, the petty Benjamin of those ten toes. But above all, tell me, for Heaven's sake, is my master here?

Isab. No, Pedro, you at least are safe. He, alas, is far away.

Ped. So one might think; but yet on the other hand I 'd swear he must be here.

Isab. Pedro!

Ped. Oh yes, his sole vocation now is to dodge my steps like some avenging ghost of *Capa and Espada.*

Enter JUAN BAPTISTA.

Bapt. (speaking to himself). If they condemn him
To death, as on my evidence alone
They must, he 'll not return to plague me more
At Salvatierra. But, fair Isabel,
How blest am I on whom the star of beauty,
Bright rival of the sun,
Beams out such rays of love!

Isab. Stand off. Away!
Not rays of love, whatever heretofore
I and my beauty may have beam'd, Baptista,
But now, if rays at all, lightnings of rage
And indignation from my heart and eyes.
Approach them at your peril! What, false traitor,
You come to court me with my brother's blood

Digitized by Google

Upon you, shed too in no manly duel,
Face to face, hand to hand, in the open field,
But like a murderer,
Behind his back stabbing him dead with slander —
Never! [*Exit.*

Bapt. But, Isabel.

Cas. Your day is over. [*Exit.*

Bapt. And that I should lose her by the very means I hoped to win her with!

Ped. Let not this prevent your memory acknowledging one who has suffered banishment, and lives in terror of his life, on your account.

Bapt. Pedro!

Ped. And at your service.

Bapt. Ah, would you were!

Ped. Try me.

Bapt. But are you still Isabel's servant?

Ped. I trust so.

Bapt. Oh, good Pedro, I would fain explain to her, and wipe out (as I easily can) the offence she has taken against me; and if you will but be my friend, and leave the door ajar to-night, that I may tell her the whole story, I 'll pay you well for it.

Ped. Well, I think there can be no danger in that. Why, if you should happen to call loudly outside the door to-night, and I let you in, forgetting to ask who it is — surely I shall not be to blame?

Digitized by Google

Bapt. 'T is well; the sun is already setting; go you to your post, and I shall be at mine immediately.

[*Exeunt severally*

SCENE III. *A Room in* GIL PEREZ'S *House.—Enter* ISABEL *and* CASILDA.

Isab. Casilda, now the flaming sun has set,
See to the doors; and you and Ines there
Sing to me — 't will beguile my melancholy.
No merry song, however; something sad
As my own fancies. *(They sing within.)*
Hark! what noise is that?
One calling at the door at such an hour! —
Again! — Bid Pedro see —
Why, what is it that makes me tremble so?
From head to foot —

Enter PEDRO *hurriedly.*

Ped. O madam!
Isab. Well?
Ped. O madam —
Opening the door — only to ask — a man
All muffled up ran by me — *(Aside.)* 'T is all right.

Enter GIL PEREZ, *cloakt.*

Isab. Who 's this?
Gil (discovering himself). I, Isabel.

Digitized by Google

Isab. Oh heavens!
Gil. Well, sister,
What troubles you?
Ped. Oh Lord, oh Lord, oh Lord! *(Hides.)*
Isab. O Gil, how have you dared to venture here,
Your very life at stake!
Gil. Small risk to one
Whom your ill doings have half kill'd already.
Isab. I do not understand you —
Gil. You need not:
I come not to explain, but to avenge;
And, mark my words, what I have come to do,
I 'll do.
Isab. Alas! is it my fault then, brother,
That traitors of their gold can make them wings
To fly into my house?
Gil. Be not afraid;
I shall not judge of you or any one
Unheard, as others seem to judge of me.
What is the matter?
Isab. Nay, I only know
You are accus'd of aiding, how I know not,
In Don Diego's death — on evidence,
As 't is believ'd, the Judge (who now is here,
Inflam'd by Donna Leonor) declares
Sufficient to convict you of your life
And property — Alas, alas, my brother!

Digitized by Google

Gil. You shall away with me; for 't is not well
To leave you here alone and unprotected.
But I must see first what this mighty Judge
Has got against me.
Isab. But how get at it?
Gil. Why from the fountain-head. But, by the Lord,
If I must fly or die for 't,
It shall not be for nothing; I 'll begin
My vengeance on this rascal. *(Pulling out* PEDRO.)
Ped. Oh begin
On some one else and sum up all on me!
Gil. How come you here?
Ped. Oh, I will tell the truth
And nothing but the truth.
Gil. Well?
Ped. Being assur'd
That you were coming hither —
Gil. Well?
Ped. I came
Before.
Gil. And why, when —
Ped. That by doing so
You should not see my face, (which you declar'd,
Seeing again, you 'd kill me,) but my back,
Which as you never swore at —
Gil (striking him). Villain, die!
Ped. (falling as dead). Oh! I am slain!

Digitized by Google

Gil. Come, Isabel, 't is I .
Must bear you on my shoulders through the flames
That rise all round. [*Exeunt* GIL *and* ISABEL.

Ped. (rising). Oh, angel of sham death,
How much I owe your out-spread wings to-day,
Under whose shadow — Yo escaparè. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV. *An open Gallery in the Judge's House at Salvatierra.— Enter Judge, and attendants, with lights, &c.*

Judge. Here in this gallery where the air is cool
Set out my desk and papers.
I must examine all these depositions.

1st Attendant. 'T is done, my lord.

2nd Attendant. My lord, a stranger asks
Admittance — upon something, as he says,
Important to the matter now in hand.

Judge. Admit him, then.

Gil (without). Manuel, keep the door;
And, till my lord and I have had our talk,
Let no one enter.

Man. (without). Trust me.

Enter GIL.

Gil. First permit me
To kiss your lordship's hand. And secondly,
Having important matter to disclose

Digitized by Google

About this business, I would tell it you
Alone —

Judge (to attendants). Retire! [*Exeunt attendants.*

Gil. And with your lordship's leave
Will take a chair.

Judge. Sit, sir.

Gil. May I presume
To ask your lordship how Gallicia
Agrees with you?

Judge. I thank you, very well.

Gil. I 'm very glad of that. Humph — as I take it,
Your lordship is come down into these parts
On a great trial?

Judge. Yes, the case is this:
A certain Don Alonso de Tordoya,
And one Gil Perez of this place, are charg'd
With slaying Don Diego d'Alvarado.

Gil. Slaying?

Judge. In duel, sir.

Gil. I marvel much
They should have dragg'd your lordship from the city
And from the court that you so much adorn,
Into this beggarly place, to try a cause
That happens almost every day in Spain.

Judge. True, sir, but this is not by any means
The whole, or kernel, of the case. These men,
Beside, and after, the said homicide,

Digitized by Google

Resisted the king's officers; this Perez
Especially — a notable ruffian
Who lives among these hills a lawless life
Of violence and murder — struck the sheriff,
And — but I 'm scarce entitled to say more
To one whose very name I know not.
Gil. Oh!
My name is quickly told, if that be all.
Judge. What is it then?
Gil. Gil Perez.
Judge. Ho! without!
Man. (appearing at the door). My lord!
Judge. And who are you?
Gil. A friend of mine.
Man. Who will take care that no one else comes in,
Till you have done. [*Exit.*
Gil. Your lordship sees how 't is —
Be not alarm'd — pray take your chair again —
I 've much to say to you.
Judge (aside). Better submit.
This desperate man may have a score beside —
Well, sir, your business with me?
Gil. Why, my lord,
I for these many days have been, so please you,
Away from home; suddenly coming back,
My friends here tell me of a mortal suit
Your lordship has against me; when I ask

Digitized by Google

For the particulars, some say one thing,
And some another. I, who naturally
Am somewhat interested in the truth,
Think it the wisest course to come at once
Straight to head-quarters.

Judge. This is strange proceeding.

Gil. Oh, if your lordship scruple telling me,
These papers will not. I 'd not for the world
Annoy your lordship. *(Takes the depositions.)*

Judge. What are you about, sir!

Gil. Conning my brief.

Judge. But, sir —

Gil. Now pray, my lord,
Resume your seat; let me not ask you this
So very often. *(Reading.)* Ah — the bare indictment
I know in a rough way, no need read that;
But for the evidence. Ah, here it is.
Humph; the first witness called, Andrew Ximenes:
"Andrew Ximenes, being duly sworn,
"Deposeth thus: that he was cutting wood,
"When the two gentlemen came out to fight;
"And stood to watch them; that, after some passes,
"Don Diego fell; and the officers of justice
"Then coming up, the other leap'd on horse,
"And fled: but being brought to ground by a shot
"That kill'd his horse, then ran, until he reach'd
"Gil Perez's house,"— here enter I,—"who first

Digitized by Google

"Courteously ask'd the sheriff to desist
"Hunting the gentleman; but when the sheriff
"Persisted, drew on him and on his people,
"And fought them back; but how and when exactly
"The wound was given, deponent cannot say.
"And all this he deposeth upon oath,
"Andrew Ximenes—" And he says the truth;
Andrew is a good, honourable fellow.
Now for the second, Gil Parrado; humph.
"Parrado, duly sworn, deposeth thus:
"That, hearing a commotion, he ran out
"And got in time to see"—here enter I—
"Gil Perez fighting with the officers,
"Then on a sudden running to the river
"Plunge in. And that is all he knows of it."
How short and sweet!
"Next and third witness, Juan Baptista,"—ay,
Now for this exemplary Christian—
"Juan Baptista sworn, deposeth thus:
"That, as luck fell, he was behind a tree
"When the two gentlemen came out to fight;
"That they fought fairly hand to hand, until"—
Here enter I—"Gil Perez suddenly
"Rush'd from a thicket by, and join'd himself
"With Don Alonso, and the two together
"Maliciously and treacherously slew
"Don Diego." Pray, my lord, what is the worth

Digitized by Google

Of such a witness, who himself admits
He stood behind a tree watching two men
Set on a third, and slay him, and yet never
Ran to his help? Well — humph — "And after this,
"Saw Don Alonso jump upon a horse
"And fly, while Perez drew his sword upon
"The officers of justice, and slew one,
"And maim'd another." Give me leave, my lord,
To take this leaf. *(Tears it out.)*
I 'll bring it back to you
When I have made this rascal Jew confess
(If ever Jews confess) what he *did* see,
If any thing; but fair that if a judge
Decide on evidence, that evidence
At least be true; that he should hear moreover
Both sides, accus'd as well as his accuser.
As to that sheriff's wounds — the only count
To which I own — I never sought the fray;
The fray sought me, as I stood innocently
At my own door; and pray what man of honour —
What would your lordship's sober self have done
In such a case?

Judge. Within! within there! ho!
Perez himself is here! the culprit! Seize him!

Man. (appearing). Ay, do, if you can catch him.

Gil. Manuel,
Let them come up; I have no more to say.

Digitized by Google

And you and I, who walk'd in by the door,
Can jump out of the window.

Voices (within). Seize him! Seize him!

Judge. One word, Gil Perez; if you yield at once,
I 'll be your friend.

Gil. I make no friends of lawyers,
And never trust their promises.

Judge. If not,
As sure as Heav'n, I 'll bring you to the scaffold.

Gil. If you can catch me.

Judge. Cannot I?

Gil. Well, try.

Judge. Ho there! upon him; and if he resist,
Cut him down!

Man. Now then, Gil!

Gil. Now, Manuel!
Out with the lights! or wanting them, we two
Will strike them, knaves, in plenty out of you.

(Confusion and Melée, in which GIL *and* MANUEL *escape.)*

Digitized by Google

ACT III.

SCENE I. *On a Mountain by Salvatierra.—Enter* GIL PEREZ, MANUEL, ISABEL, *and* JUANA.

Gil. THIS mountain then, upon whose wrinkled edge
The weary moon reclines, must be our fort;
Where, in some green and shady spot of it,
(Hung round with savage, inaccessible rocks,)
While Isabel and your Juana rest,
You and I, Manuel, will steal into
The little village nestled there below,
And of such travellers as come this way,
Demand (our own all gone) a scanty living,
By fair entreaty, not by violence;
Until, pursuit giv'n up, we may retreat
Elsewhere, to live upon what little means
Injustice leaves us.

Man. Gil, 't is nothing new
For criminals to hide
Ev'n where they did the crime where vengeance least
Expects to find them, and hunts round in vain.
And even should they light upon the place,
Surely we two, back'd by these friendly rocks,
Can keep at bay the rabble that we foil'd
On level ground.

Digitized by Google

Isab. I have listen'd to you both,
And take it ill you reckon on yourselves
Alone; when I, who, though a woman, having yet
Your blood, Gil Perez, running in my veins,
And something of your spirit in my heart,
Am at your side.

Jua. And I, who, like a coward,
Chime in the last; yet, if with little power,
With right good will indeed.

Gil. Well spoken both!
But I maintain it as a golden law,
Women be women ever; keep you quiet,
And comforting yourselves as best you may,
While Manuel and I, as becomes men,
Provide for you in all.

Isab. Well, we at least,
If fit for nothing else, can pray for you.

[*Exeunt* ISABEL *and* JUANA.

Gil. Now they are gone, I want to talk with you
On a grave matter, Manuel. 'T is this.
Among those depositions at the Judge's,
One rascal, and a rascal too whose gold
Makes weigh his witness against honesty,
Declar'd on oath he saw me, me, Gil Perez,
Abetting Don Alonso treacherously
To slay Don Luis.

Man. Who was this?

Digitized by Google

Gil. Why one
Who has not this alone to answer for,
As you will know when I name — Juan Baptista.
Man. A coward, who, as all such villains do,
Flies to the tongue for vengeance, not the sword;
Behind one's back too —
Why, let us go at once, and in broad day
Before all eyes, before the very Judge's
He lied to, drag the rascal from his house,
And make him eat his words in the very place
He spit them forth in.
Gil. All this we will do,
But at some better opportunity,
And fitter place. I 've heard my grandsire say,
"If you begin the fray, why then
You must abide the how and when;
But who 's drawn into it, I trow,
May suit himself with when and how."
But footsteps! Hark! —
Now to commence our calling, as new members
Of the most courteous cut-purse company.

Enter LEONARDO, *travelling.*

Leon. (speaking as he enters). Lead on the horses,
Mendo, 't is so pleasant
Under the shade of these wooded rocks,
I 'll walk some way alone.

Digitized by Google

Gil. Your servant, sir.

Leon. Sir, God be with you.

Gil. Travelling all alone?
And whither, may I ask?

Leon. To Lisbon, sir.

Gil. And whence?

Leon. I started at the break of day
From Salvatierra.

Gil. Ay? Then you can tell
What news is stirring there.

Leon. Oh nothing, sir.
Unless perhaps the exploits of a fellow
The terror of that country; one Gil Perez,
I think; who, when justice was at his heels
After some crime or other I forget,
Wounded the sheriff, kill'd his officer,
And then was impudent enough to walk
Into the very Judge's house, and there,
Before his very eyes, snatch up and read
The depositions drawn up against him.

Gil. A very curious story, that!

Leon. And then,
Though half the place was up in arms on him,
He, and another who is, as I hear,
Much such another rascal as himself,
Broke through them all and got away scot free!
But they are after him.

Digitized by Google

Gil. This is the news?
Leon. All that I know of.
Gil. Well — before you go,
I 'll ask you, sir, who by your speech and bearing
Seem a good fellow. If a friend of yours
Came flying for his life, the Philistines
Close on his heels, and fell before your feet,
At your own door, exhausted, and beseeching
Help and protection of you — let me ask
What would you do?
Leon. What do? why, give it him.
Gil. You would? and would you, in so doing,
Deserve the name of rascal for your pains?
Leon. No, certainly.
Gil. And when a writ was out
Against you for so doing, charging you
With murder, threatening death and confiscation,
Would you be more a rascal for demanding
Such needful information of the Judge
As he alone could give of evidence
Which you suspected, and found false?
Leon. No, truly.
Gil. One question more. If, damn'd by such false [witness,
You were found guilty, all your property
Confiscated, yourself condemn'd to die,
Might not you fly the misdirected sword
Of justice, and of those who well could spare

Digitized by Google

Beg a poor tithe of what she robb'd you wholly,
And be no rascal still?

Leon. Oh clearly, clearly.

Gil. This granted then, look to the inference.
I am Gil Perez; I who struck the sheriff,
And kill'd his man, and read the Judge's papers,
And flying hither, shorn of house and home,
Ask you for that of which the law robs me;
Which, having plenty, if you will not give,
By your own free admission I may take,
And be no rascal still.

Leon. You need not use
My argument against me; I respect
And pity you, Gil Perez; take this chain;
If it be not enough, I pledge my word
I 'll bring you more hereafter.

Gil. All you say
Tells of a generous heart. But ere I take
Your present, tell me — do you give it me
For fear, alone, and in my power, may be,
Or of good will?

Leon. Good will! I swear to you,
Gil Perez, I would even do the same
Had I a squadron at my side.

Gil. As such
I take it, then. For when my life must pay,
As soon or late it must, the penalty

Digitized by Google

Of hungry vengeance, I shall lay it down
Contented in my conscience, and report
That I but took from those who had to give,
And freely gave; the only retribution
My evil star allow'd me.

Leon. True enough.
Is there aught else that I can do for you?

Gil. Nothing.

Leon. Farewell — and may a better fate
Await you.

Gil. Farewell — shall I see you safe
Over the mountain?

Leon. Not a step — adieu. [*Exit.*

Man. Sure never robbery was known to wear
So fair a face.

Gil. Tut, tut, you 're not to call it
Robbery, but preferment, Manuel.
But who are these?

Enter two FARMERS.

1st Farm. I tell you I have bought the stock of vines
Upon his farm. [

2d Farm. What, Gil's?

1st Farm. Yes; sold, you know,
To pay the costs of prosecution,
Judges and Alguazils and such; and I
Am carrying them the money.

Digitized by Google

Man. Fair game this.

Gil. I know him, a near neighbour. Well, friend Antony,
How goes it with you?

1*st Farm.* What! Gil Perez! you
When the whole country 's after you?

Gil. And if they catch me nobody 's the worse
Except myself. But till they catch and kill me,
(When I shall want, you know, no more to live on,)
I 've not a stiver; clipt of the estate
Whose price you carry in your pocket there.
Now, I 'd not starve; but, on the other hand,
Would not wrong any one to keep me from 't:
How shall we settle that?

1*st Farm.* Oh easily — [give it up
Take this — and this *(offers money)* — I had better
At once, for fear. *(Aside.)*

Gil. But do you give me this
Of free good will?

1st Farm. Why as to that, Gil Perez,
My will is good to serve you; but, you see,
I am not very rich.

Gil. You mean by that
You would not give this money could you help it?

1st Farm. Why certainly.

Gil. Then keep it and begone
In peace.

Digitized by Google

1st Farm. Gil Perez!

Gil. I 'll not have it said
I robb'd — not shamed to beg in my distress.

2nd Farm. And I pray, Gil, and he who likes may hear me,
God keep you from your enemies. I have here
Six pieces that my wife knows nothing of;
You 're welcome.

Gil. Not a penny; go your ways,
Or night will reach you ere you reach your homes.

[*Exeunt Farmers.*

Man. Gil, while you talk'd with them, I 've heard
As of pursuit — listen! — and many too. [a sound

Gil. Let us up higher then!

Man. Beware, the trees
Will whisper of our whereabout.

Gil. Then here
Behind the rocks that tell no tales.

Man. Quick, quick!

(They hide.)

Enter DONNA LEONOR, JUAN BAPTISTA, JUDGE, *Alguazils, &c.*

Bapt. Here, madam, till the scorching sun be sunk,
Tarry awhile.

Leonor. My cousin's grievous sickness
Calls me with all speed homeward.

Digitized by Google

Judge. And as yet
No vestige of those ruffians, whom to find
And bring to justice, madam, in your cause,
I 'll peril my own life.

Gil. Hist, Manuel!

Man. Ay, but speak lower.

Gil. When better than now
Can I avenge Alonso and myself,
When judge, accus'd, accuser, and false witness
Are all together?

Man. Wait awhile.

Gil. But —

Man. See,
Fresh comers.

Gil. I shall lose the golden moment.

Enter some, dragging along PEDRO.

Judge. A prisoner?

1st Man. One of Gil Perez's knaves, my lord, whom we have just now caught creeping over to Portugal. The very day Perez swam over there this fellow was missed from Salvatierra, and returned on the very evening of his return.

Judge. Very suspicious indeed.

Pedro. Very, my lord, I grant it. Yes, wherever I go, to Portugal, Flanders, Germany, China, Japan, 't is all the same. I am sure to find him there.

Digitized by Google

Judge. You know then where he is now?

Ped. Oh, doubtless close at hand; he must be, I being here; he is such a constant master, that if you put me in prison he 'll soon surrender only to follow me there.

Judge. Point out the place, then.

Ped. Would to Heav'n I could, for were he clapt up safe I 'd not follow *him*, I promise you. Indeed, my lord, I live
In terror of my life from him.
Flying from him it was I fled from home
To Portugal; where the first man I saw
Was he I thought I 'd left at Salvatierra:
Flying to Andalusia, the first face
I saw was his I left in Portugal:
Till, rushing homeward in despair, the man
I thought I 'd left behind in Andalusia,
Met me at once, and having knockt me down,
Left me for dead. Well, I got up at last,
And fled again: but, scarcely got a mile,
Your people seize me on suspicion
Of knowing where he hides, and so far justly,
That carrying me by way of a decoy,
I 'll lay my life he soon were in the trap.

Judge. Your folly, or your cunning, sir, shall not mislead us; tell me where your master is at once, or the wooden horse —

Digitized by Google

Ped. Alas, I 'm a bad rider.

Judge. Take him to the village and keep him close. By his looks I doubt not, spite of this affected simplicity, he 's a desperate ruffian.

Ped. I seem such a desperate fellow to him! Dear me, of the four men here let one depart, and leave three, and one of the three leave two, and one of the two one; and that one leave half himself; and that half his half; and that quarter his half, till it comes to *nil:* it would still be nilly willy with me.

[*Exit, guarded by Alguazils.*

Gil. Manuel,
The Alguazils are gone.

Man. Now for it then.

Gil (appearing). God save this noble company.

All. Gil Perez!

Gil. Be not alarm'd; I have but a few words
To say to one of you, this Juan Baptista.

Judge. Holloa! my guards!

Man. Judge, never strain your throat,
Unless you would be answer'd by such guards
As waited on you yesterday.

Judge. Is this the way that I, and, in my person,
That justice is insulted?

Gil. Nay, my lord,
You least of all should tax a criminal
Who so punctiliously respects yourself,

Digitized by Google

And the realm's Justice in your belly lodg'd,
That not to waste you in a vain pursuit,
He waits on you himself.
Judge. Impudent man!
And this before that most illustrious lady
Your treachery has render'd brotherless;
And who with daily prayers —
Gil. And 't is for this —
That she may hear my vindication
Ev'n from the very lips that made the charge,
And cease an unjust persecution,
Unworthy of her noble name and blood,
That I am here. For, madam, if I prove
That Don Alonso in fair duel slew
Your brother, and without my treacherous help,
Or any man's, would you pursue us still?
Leonor. No, sir; for though the laws of duel are
For men alone, I know enough of them
To pardon all that was in honour done,
Ev'n to my cost. Prove what you say you will,
And Don Alonso may take sanctuary
In my own house against myself and all.
Gil. 'T is nobly said. On this I take my stand:
And since 't is general and accepted law
That what a witness first shall swear, and then
Forswear, stand for no evidence at all,
Stand forth, Juan Baptista;

Digitized by Google

Here is your deposition; I will read it
Before the very Judge you swore it to,
And before this great lady, and do you
Substantiate or deny it point by point.

Judge. Audacity!

Gil (reading). In the first place you swear,
That, "As luck fell, you were behind a tree
"When the two gentlemen came out to fight."
Say, is this true?

Bapt. It is.

Gil. "And that they fought
"Hand to hand fairly, until suddenly
"Gil Perez, rushing from a thicket, sided
"With Don Alonso." Now, bethink you well;
Is this the truth, Baptista?

Bapt. Yes. I swear it.

Gil. Infamous liar! *(Shoots him with a pistol.)*

Bapt. (falling). Heav'n have mercy on me!

Gil. My lord, you must another murder add
To my black catalogue. Come, Manuel,
We must away while we have time. Farewell.

[*Exeunt* GIL *and* MANUEL.

Judge. By the most sacred person of my king,
I swear to punish this audacity,
If it should cost my life.

Bapt. Oh, listen, lady;
While I have breath to speak. I 'm justly slain.

Digitized by Google

I tried to swear Gil Perez's life away
To gain his sister; he has told you true:
In fair and open duel, hand to hand,
Was Don Diego slain. Oh let my death
Atone for this, and my last dying words
Attest it. *(Dies.)*

Enter the Alguazils with PEDRO. [see.

Alg. We heard a pistol, and returned, my lord, to

Judge. It was Gil Perez; that is his work. *(Pointing to* BAPTISTA.*)*

Ped. There, said I not the truth?

Judge. He must not escape; after him! As to this fellow here, who is plainly in his secrets, let two Alguazils keep guard upon him here, lest he do further mischief; the rest come with me.

Ped. What crime have I committed? Did I not tell you, my lord, he would come, and did he not come?

Judge. Peace, traitor! Come, madam. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Another Pass in the same Mountain — firing and shouting heard; after which, enter* ISABEL *and* JUANA *on a platform of rock above the stage.*

Isab. That arquebuss! of which only the thunder
Has reach'd us of perhaps some deadly bolt

Digitized by Google

On one of those we love!
Why tarry they so long? What think you, Juana?
Jua. Oh what, but share your fears!
Isab. Let us descend,
And learn the truth at once; better at once
To die, than by this torture.

(As they are about to descend, enter to them suddenly GIL PEREZ *and* MANUEL.)

Gil. Wait!
Isab. My brother!
Jua. Manuel!
Gil. They are coming; hide we here;
There is no time —

Enter JUDGE, LEONOR, *Alguazils, &c.*

Judge. After them! after them!
By Heav'n, this mountain-top shall be the scaffold
On which the wretch shall expiate his crimes.
Two thousand scudi for the man who brings,
Dead or alive, Gil Perez!
Gil (appearing above). By the Lord,
You rate me cheap, my lord; I 'll set you higher —
I say four thousand scudi for the Judge,
Alive or stuff'd! [*wounds* GIL.)
Judge. There he is! Fire! *(Alguazil fires and*
Gil (falling). God help me!

Digitized by Google

Judge. Yield.

Gil (struggling). I 've an arm left yet.

Alg. He 'll fight when dead.

Judge. Away with him! (JUDGE *and Alguazils carry off* GIL.)

Man. (struggling with JUANA). Leave hold of me, I say.

Jua. Oh! Manuel!

Isab. Oh! my brother!

Man. Let me go, Or I will dash you headlong with myself. *(He rushes down,* ISABEL *and* JUANA *after him.)*

SCENE III. *Same as* SCENE I.— PEDRO *discovered guarded by two Alguazils.*

Ped. Shots and shouting! They must be at work. Perhaps you gentlemen will wait, while I go and see.

Alg. Be quiet, or two bullets —

Ped. Oh, one would be enough, thank you. Well, if I must n't go, will you two gentlemen? and leave me to wait for you? I 'm quite indifferent.

Alg. We leave you not an instant or an inch.

Ped. Were ever guards half so polite! Sure, I must be a holiday to be so strictly kept.

Alg. Hark! They are coming.

Digitized by Google

Enter JUDGE *and Alguazils with* GIL, *a cloak thrown over him.*

Judge. Where is the other prisoner ?

Alg. Here, my lord.

Judge. March on with us. [blood and weariness.

Alg. II. My lord, this man will faint with loss of

Judge. Halt then, and let him breathe awhile.

(They uncover GIL, *and* PEDRO *sees him.)*

Ped. I might have guessed it ! Let me be in the bilboes, on the very scaffold, he must be with me : he will die on purpose to lie in the same grave with me, I think !

Gil. Whose voice is that ?

Ped. Nobody's. [over.

Gil. Pedro ? Courage, my poor boy. My day is Oh, vanity of mortal strength !

Judge. But who are these ?

Enter DONNA LEONOR, *with* ISABEL, JUANA, *and Servants.*

Leonor. I, Donna Leonor, who, falling in
With these sad ladies, do repent me much,
That, mis-directed by a lying tongue,
I have pursued this gentleman — I doubt
To death — if not, I charge you from this moment
Leave him at liberty.

Isab. Or else —

Digitized by Google

Enter suddenly MANUEL *and* DON ALONSO, *and Followers.*

Alon. Or else,
Look to it.

Gil. Don Alonso! whom I thought
Far off upon the seas?

Alon. And should have been,
But when my foot was on the very plank
That rock'd upon the foam along the beach,
I, who could never get you from my heart,
And knew that you had come to peril hither,
Could but return once more to him who sav'd
My life, though he had wav'd me from his side.
Enough; I am in time. I tell you, sir,
Give up this man at once. *(To the* JUDGE.)

Judge. Not for you all!

Alon. Then at him and his people!

(ALONSO, MANUEL, *and their people rush on the* JUDGE, *Alguazils, &c., disarm them, and beat them out.)*

Alon. (embracing GIL). My friend is free.

Gil. And what first use shall make
Of freedom?

Ped. Why, turn Friar; you can then
Be free and easy too, and leave me so.
Oh, sir, have I not had enough of terror,

Digitized by Google

Exile, and hunger, to deserve your pardon?
Plead for me, Don Alonso.

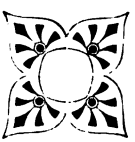
Alon. Gil —

Gil. Nay, nay,
What could you seem about to ask of me
But granted ere 't was said? Go. I forgive you.
With which magnanimous forbearance now
Gil Perez, the Gallician, makes his bow.

"Thus ends," says Calderon, "the first part of the *hazañas notables* of Luis Perez," whose name I have, for sundry reasons, (and without offence to the hero, I hope,) changed to *Gil.* He was "a notorious robber," says Mr. Ticknor, a kind of Spanish Rob Roy perhaps; at all events, one whose historical reality is intimated by greater distinctness of character than is usual in these plays. Of such gentry examples are never wanting in Spain, where so little alters to this day; witness the career of the famous José Maria, quite lately ended; and who, I read in a book of Travels, was, like Gil, a farmer, for his first calling; a most merciful robber when he took to his second; and who performed Gil's feat of confronting, if not a Judge, a Prime Minister in his own den.

Gil perhaps had better have "played his pranks" (as Fuller says of Robin Hood) in prose; but he was a lawless fellow, and blank verse lay in his way. Those who think his style altogether too heroic for a country robber, will at least find my version more than excused by the original.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

THREE JUDGMENTS AT A BLOW.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

PEDRO IV., *King of Aragon.*
DON MENDO TORELLAS, *his Minister.*
DONNA VIOLANTE, *Mendo's Daughter.*
ELVIRA, *her Maid.*
DON LOPE DE URREA,
DONNA BLANCA, *his Wife.*
DON LOPE, *their Son.*
BEATRICE, *their Servant.*
DON GUILLEN, *a Friend of Don Lope's.*
VICENTE, *Young Lope's Servant.*

ROBBERS, OFFICERS, ROYAL SUITE, &c.

Digitized by Google

THREE JUDGMENTS AT A BLOW.

(Las tres Justicias en Una.)

ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Mountain Pass near Saragossa. Shot within. Then enter* DON MENDO *and* VIOLANTE *pursued by robbers, among whom is* VICENTE.

Men. VILLAINS, let steel or bullet do their worst,
I 'll die ere yield.
Viol. Heav'n help us!
Robber I. Fool, to strive
Against such odds — upon their own ground too,
Red with the blood of hundreds like yourselves.
Vic. Come, sir, no more ado;
But quietly give my young madam up,
Nice picking for our captain.
Men. Not while a drop of blood is in my body.
Robbers. Here 's at you then!
Viol. My father!

Digitized by Google

(As the Robbers attack MENDO, *enter* DON LOPE.)

Lope. How now? whom have you here?

Vic. Oh, noble captain,
We found this lady resting from the sun
Under the trees, with a small retinue,
Who of course fled.
All but this ancient gentleman, who still
Holds out against us.

Lope (to MENDO). What can you expect
Against such numbers?

Men. Not my life, but death.
You come in time —
Upon my knees I do beseech of you *(kneels)*
No other mercy save of instant death
To *both* of us.

Lope. Arise! you are the first
Has mov'd me to the mercy you decline.
This lady is — your wife?

Men. My only daughter!

Viol. In spirit as in blood. If by his death
You think to make you masters of my life,
Default of other weapon, with these hands
I 'll cease the breath of life, or down these rocks
Dash myself headlong.

Lope. Lady, calm yourself;
Your beauty has subdued an angry devil

Digitized by Google

One like yourself first rais'd within my soul.
Your road lies whither, sir?
Men. To Saragossa.
Where if I could requite —
Lope. Your name?
Men. Don Mendo
Torellas, after a long embassage
To Paris, Rome, and Naples, summon'd back
By Pedro, king of Aragon — with whom
If 't be (as oft) some youthful petulance,
Calling for justice or revenge at home,
Drives you abroad to these unlawful courses,
I pledge my word —
Lope. Alas, sir, I might hail
Your offer could I hope that your deserts,
However great, might cancel my account
Of ill-deserving. But indeed my crimes
Have gather'd so in number, and in weight,
And condemnation — committed, some of them,
To stave away the very punishment
They must increase at last; others, again,
In the sheer desperation of forgiveness
That all had heap'd upon me —
Men. Nay, nay, nay;
Despair not; trust to my good offices;
In pledge of which here, now, before we part,
I swear to make your pardon the first boon

Digitized by Google

I 'll ask for or accept at the king's hand.
Your name ?
Lope. However desperate, and asham'd
To tell it, you shall hear it — and my story.
Retire ! *(To the Robbers, who exeunt.)*
Don Mendo, I am Lope, son
Of Lope de Urrea, of some desert,
At least in virtue of my blood.
Men. Indeed !
Urrea and myself were, I assure you,
Intimate friends of old,— another tie,
If wanting one, to bind me to your service.
Lope. I scarce can hope it, sir ; if I, his son,
Have so disgrac'd him with my evil ways,
And so impoverisht him with my expenses,
Were you his friend, you scarcely can be mine.
And yet, were I to tell you all, perhaps
I were not all to blame.
Men. Come, tell me all ;
'T is fit that I should hear it.
Viol. I begin
To breathe again.
Lope. Then listen, sir. My father in his youth,
As you perhaps may know, but *why* I know not,
Held off from marriage ; till, bethinking him,
Or warn'd by others, what a shame it were
So proud a name should die for want of wearer,

Digitized by Google

In his late years he took to wife a lady
Of blameless reputation, and descent
As noble as his own, but so unequal
In years, that she had scarcely told fifteen
When age his head had whiten'd with such snows
As froze his better judgment.
Men. Ay, I know
Too well — too well! *(Aside.)*
Lope. Long she repell'd his suit,
Feeling how ill ill-sorted years agree;
But, at the last, before her father's will
She sacrific'd her own. Oh sacrifice
That little lacks of slaughter! So, my father
Averse from wedlock's self, and she from him,
Think what a wedlock this must be, and what
The issue that was like to come of it!
While other sons cement their parents' love,
My birth made but a wider breach in mine.
Just in proportion as my mother lov'd
Her boy, my father hated him — yes, hated,
Even when I was lisping at his knees
That little language charms all fathers' hearts.
Neglecting me himself, as I grew up
He neither taught, nor got me taught, to curb
A violent nature, which by love or lash
May even be corrected in a wolf:
Till, as I grew, and found myself at large,

Digitized by Google

Spoilt both by mother's love and father's hate,
I took to evil company, gave rein
To every passion as it rose within,
Wine, dice, and women — what a precipice
To build the fabric of a life upon!
Which, when my father
Saw tottering to its fall, he strove to train
The tree that he had suffer'd to take root
In vice, and grow up crooked — all too late!
Though not revolting to be ruled by him,
I could not rule myself. And so we liv'd
Both in one house, but wholly apart in soul,
Only alike in being equally
My mother's misery. Alas, my mother!
My heart is with her still! Why, think, Don Mendo,
That, would she see me, I must creep at night
Muffled, a tip-toe, like a thief, to her,
Lest he should know of it! why, what a thing
That such a holy face as filial love
Must wear the mask of theft! But to sum up
The story of my sorrows and my sins
That have made me a criminal, and him
Almost a beggar;
In the full hey-day of my wilfulness
There liv'd a lady near, in whom methought
Those ancient enemies, wit, modesty,
And beauty, all were reconcil'd; to her,

Digitized by Google

Casting my coarser pleasures in the rear,
I did devote myself — first with mute signs,
Which by and by began to breathe in sighs,
And by and by in passionate words that love
Toss'd up all shapeless, but all glowing hot,
Up from my burning bosom, and which first
Upon her willing ears fell unreprov'd,
Then on her heart, which by degrees they wore
More than I us'd to say her senseless threshold
Wore by the nightly pressure of my feet.
She heard my story, pitied me
With her sweet eyes; and my unruly passion,
Flusht with the promise of first victory,
Push'd headlong to the last; not knowing, fool!
How in love's world the shadow of disappointment
Exactly dogs the substance of success.
In fine, one night I stole into her house,
Into her chamber; and with every vow
Of marriage on my tongue; as easy then
To utter, as thereafter to forswear,
When in the very jewel I coveted
Very compliance seem'd to make a flaw
That made me careless of it when possess'd.
From day to day I put our marriage off
With false pretence, which she at last suspecting,
Falsely continued seeming to believe,
Till she had got a brother to her side,

Digitized by Google

(A desperate man then out-law'd, like myself,
For homicide,) who, to avenge her shame,
With other two waylaid me on a night
When as before I unsuspectingly
Crept to her house; and set upon me so,
All three at once, I just had time to parry
Their thrusts, and draw a pistol, which till then
They had not seen, when —

Voices (within). Fly! Away! Away!

Enter VICENTE.

Lope. What is the matter now?

Vic. Captain!

Lope. Well, speak.

Vic. We must be off; the lady's retinue
Who fled have rous'd the soldiery, and with them
Are close upon our heels. We 've not a moment.

Lope. Then up the mountain!

Men. Whither I will see
They shall not follow you; and take my word
I 'll not forget my promise.

Lope. I accept it.

Men. Only, before we part, give me some token,
The messenger I send may travel with
Safe through your people's hands.

Lope (giving a dagger). This then.

Digitized by Google

Men. A dagger?
An evil-omen'd pass-word.
Lope. Ah, Don Mendo,
What has a wretched robber got to give
Unless some implement of death! And see,
The wicked weapon cannot reach your hand,
But it must bite its master's. *(His hand bleeding.)*
Ill-omen'd as you say!
Voices (within). Away! Away!
Vic. They 're close upon us!
Viol. O quick! begone! My life hangs on a thread
While yours is in this peril.
Lope. That alone
Should make me fly to save it. Farewell, lady.
Farewell, Don Mendo.
Men. and Viol. Farewell!
Lope. What strange things
One sun between his rise and setting brings. [*Exit.*
Men. Let us anticipate, and so detain
The soldiers. That one turn of Fortune's wheel
Years of half-buried memory should reveal!
Viol. Could I believe that crime should ever be
So amiable! How fancy with us plays,
And with one touch colours our future days!
[*Exeunt severally.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE II. *An Audience Hall in the Palace of* PEDRO, *King of Aragon.—Enter* DON LOPE DE URREA *and* DON GUILLEN.

Guil. Such bosom friends, sir, as from infancy
Your son and I have been, I were asham'd,
You being in such trouble, not to offer
My help and consolation. Tell me aught
That I can serve you in.

Urr. Believe me, sir,
My heart most deeply thanks your courtesy.
When came you to the city?

Guil. Yesterday,
From Naples.

Urr. Naples?

Guil. To advance a suit
I have in Aragon.

Urr. I too am here
For some such purpose; to beseech the king
A boon I doubt that he will never grant.

Guil. Ev'n now his Highness comes.

Enter King PEDRO *and Train.*

Urr. So please your Majesty, listen to one,
Of whom already you have largely heard —
Don Lope de Urrea.

King. Oh! Don Lope!

Urr. I come not hither to repeat in words

Digitized by Google

The purport of so many past petitions,
My sorrows now put on a better face
Before your Highness' presence. I beseech you
To hear me patiently.

King. Speak, Urrea, speak!

Urr. Speak if I can, whose sorrow rising still
Clouds its own utterance. My liege, my son,
Don Lope, lov'd a lady here; seduc'd her
By no feign'd vows of marriage, but compell'd
By me, who would not listen to a suit
Without my leave contracted, put it off
From day to day, until the lady, tired
Of a delay that argued treachery,
Engag'd her brother in the quarrel; who
With two companions set upon my son
One night to murder him. The lad, whose mettle
Would never brook affront, nor car'd for odds,
Drew on all three; slew one — a homicide
That nature's common law of self-defence
Permits. The others fled, and set on him
The officers of justice, one of whom
In his escape he struck —
A self-defence against your laws I own
Not so to be excus'd — then fled himself
Up to the mountains. I must needs confess
He better had deserv'd an after-pardon
By lawful service in your camp abroad

Digitized by Google

Than aggravating old offence at home,
By lawless plunder; but your Highness knows
It is an ancient law of honour here
In Aragon, that none of noble blood
In mortal quarrel quit his native ground.
But to return. The woman, twice aggriev'd,
Her honour and her brother lost at once,
(For him it was my son slew of the three,)
Now seeks to bring her sorrows into port:
And pitying my grey hairs and misery,
Consents to acquit my son on either count,
Providing I supply her wherewithal
To hide her shame within some holy house;
Which, straiten'd as I am, (that, by my troth,
I scarce, my liege, can find my daily bread,)
I have engag'd to do; not only this,
But, in addition to the sum in hand,
A yearly income — which to do, I now
Am crept into my house's poorest rooms,
And, (to such straits may come nobility!)
Have let for hire what should become my rank
And dignity to an old friend, Don Mendo
Torellas, who I hear returns to-day
To Saragossa. It remains, my liege,
That, being by the plaintiff's self absolv'd,
My son your royal pardon only needs;
Which if not he nor I merit ourselves,

Digitized by Google

Yet let the merits of a long ancestry,
Who swell your glorious annals with their names
Writ in their blood, plead for us not in vain;
Pity the snows of age that misery
Now thaws in torrents from my eyes; yet more,
Pity a noble lady — my wife — his mother —
Who sits bow'd down with sorrow and disgrace
In her starv'd house.

King. This is a case, Don Lope,
For my Chief Justice, not for me.

Urr. Alas!
How little hope has he who, looking up
To dove-ey'd mercy, sees but in her place
Severely-sworded justice!

King. Is 't not fit
That the tribunal which arraign'd the crime
Pronounce the pardon also?

Urr. Were it so,
I know not where to look for that tribunal,
Or only find it speechless, since the death
Of Don Alfonso.

King. His successor's name
This day will be announc'd to Aragon.

Urr. Yet let a father's tears —

King. They might indeed
The marble heart of justice make to bleed.

[*Exeunt* KING, DON GUILLEN, *and Train.*

Digitized by Google

Urr. And thus to satisfy the exigence
Of public estimation, one is forc'd
To sacrifice entreaty and estate
For an ill son.
Yet had but this petition been inflam'd
With love, that love of his had lit in me,
My prayer had surely prosper'd. But 't is done,
Fruitless or not: *well* done, for Blanca's sake;
Poor Blanca, though indeed she knows it not,
And scarcely would believe —
But who comes here?—the friend of better days,
Don Mendo! I would hide me from his eye,
But, oh indignity, his ancient friend,
Equal in birth and honour to himself,
Must now, reduc'd to 't by a shameless son,
Become his tavern-keeper! For the present
I may hold back — the King too! come to meet
And do him honour.

Enter, meeting, KING, *with Train, and* DON MENDO.

Men. My royal master, let me at your feet
Now and for ever —
King. Rise, Don Mendo, rise,
Chief Justice of all Aragon.
Men. My liege,
How shall I rise with such a weight of honour

Digitized by Google

And solemnest responsibility,
As you have laid upon my neck!
King. 'T is long
Since we have met. How fare you?
Men. How but well,
On whom your royal favour shines so fair!
King. Enough. You must be weary. For to-day
Go rest yourself, Chief Justice. And to-morrow
We 'll talk together. I have much to tell,
And much to ask of you.
Men. Your Highness knows
How all my powers are at your sole command,
And only well employ'd in doing it.
[*Exit* KING *with Train.*
Urr. If it be true that true nobility
Slowly forgets what once it has esteem'd,
I think Don Mendo will not turn away
From Lope de Urrea.
Men. My old friend!
I must forget myself, as well as honour,
When I forget the debt I owe your love.
Urr. For old acquaintance then I kiss your hand;
And on two other counts. First, as your host,
You know, on your arrival; be assur'd
That I shall do my best to entertain you:
And, secondly, congratulating you

Digitized by Google

On your new dignity, which you hardly don
Before I am your suitor.
Men. Oh, Don Lope,
How gladly shall I serve you!
Urr. This memorial
I had presented to the king, and he
Referr'd to his Chief Justice.
Men. Oh trust to me,
And to my loyal friendship in the cause.
Urr. A son of mine, Don Mendo—
Men. Nay, no more—
I am appriz'd of all.
Urr. I know that men
Think my heart harden'd toward my only son.
It might have been so; not, though, till my son's
Was flint to me. O Mendo, by his means
My peace of mind, estate, and good repute
Are gone for ever!
Men. Nay, be comforted:
I fill a post where friendship well can grant
What friendship fairly asks. Think from this hour
That all is ended. Not for your sake only,
But for your son's; to whom (you soon shall hear
The whole strange history) I owe my life,
And sure shall not be slack to save his own.
All will be well. Come, let us to your house,

Digitized by Google

Whither, on coming to salute the king,
I sent my daughter forward.
Urr. I rejoice
To think how my poor Blanca will rejoice
To do her honour. You remember Blanca?
Men. Remember her indeed, and shall delight
To see her once again. *(Aside.)* O lying tongue,
To say so, when the heart beneath would fain
We had not met, or might not meet again!

SCENE III. *A Room in* URREA'S *House.— Enter* BLANCA *and* VIOLANTE *in travelling dress, meeting.*

Blan. How happy am I that so fair a guest
Honours my house by making it her own,
And me her servant!
To welcome and to wait on Violante
I have thus far intruded.
Viol. Nay, Donna Blanca,
Mine is the honour and the happiness,
Who, coming thus to Aragon a stranger,
Find such a home and hostess. Pardon me
That I detain you in this ante-room,
My own not ready yet.
Blan. You come indeed
Before your people look'd for you.

Digitized by Google

Viol. But not
Before my wishes, lady, I assure you:
Not minding on the mountains to encounter
Another such a risk.
Blan. There was a first then?
Viol. So great that I assure you (and too truly) *(aside)*
My heart yet beats with it.
Blan. How was 't?
Viol. Why, thus:
In wishing to escape the noon-day sun,
That seem'd to make both air and land breathe fire,
I lighted from my litter in a spot
That one might almost think the flowers had chosen
To tourney in, so green and smooth the sward
On which they did oppose their varied crests,
So fortified above with closing leaves,
And all encompass'd by a babbling stream.
There we sat down to rest; when suddenly
A company of robbers broke upon us,
And would have done their worst, had not as suddenly
A young and gallant gentleman, their captain,
Arrested them, and kindly — but how now?
Why weep you, Donna Blanca?
Blan. Weeping, yes,
My sorrows with your own — But to your tale.
Viol. Nay, why should I pursue it if my trouble
Awake the memory of yours?

Digitized by Google

Blan. Your father,
Saw he this youth, this robber cavalier
Who grac'd disgrace so handsomely ?
Viol. Indeed,
And owes his life and honour to him.
Blan. Oh !
He had aton'd for many a foregone crime
By adding that one more ! But I talk wild ;
Pardon me, Violante.
I have an anguish ever in my breast
At times will rise, and sting me into madness ;
Perhaps you will not wonder when you hear
This robber was my son, my only son,
Whose wicked ways have driv'n him where he is,
From home, and law, and love !
Viol. Forgive me, lady,
I mind me now — he told us —
But I was too confus'd and terrified
To heed to names. Else credit me —

Enter URREA *and* MENDO.

Urr. Largess ! a largess, wife ! for bringing you
Joy and good fortune to our house, from which
They have so long been banisht.
Blan. Long indeed !
Urr. So long, methinks, that coming all at once
They make me lose my manners. *(To* VIOLANTE.)

Digitized by Google

This fair hand
Must, as I think it will, my pardon sign;
Inheriting such faculty. Oh, Blanca,
I must not let one ignorant moment slip —
You know not half our joy.
Don Mendo, my old friend, and our now guest,
Grac'd at the very threshold by the King
With the Chief-Justiceship of Aragon,
Points his stern office with an act of mercy,
By pardoning your Lope — whom we now
Shall have once more with us, I trust, for ever.
Oh join with me in thanking him!

Blan. I am glad,
Don Mendo, that we meet under a roof
Where I can do you honour. For my son,
I must suppose from what your daughter says,
You would, without our further prayer or thanks,
Have done as you have done.

Men. Too true — I know —
And you still better, lady — that, all done,
I am your debtor still.

Enter ELVIRA.

Elv. Madam, your room is ready.

Viol. May I then
Retire?

Blan. If I may wait upon you thither.

Digitized by Google

Urr. Nay, nay, 't is I that as a grey-hair'd page
Must do that office.
Men. Granted, on condition
That I may do as much for Donna Blanca.
Viol. As master of the house, I must submit
Without condition. [*Exeunt* VIOLANTE *and* URREA.
Blan. You were going, sir? —
Men. To wait upon you, Blanca.
Blan. Nay, Don Mendo,
Least need of that.
Men. Oh, Blanca, Heaven knows
How much I have desir'd to talk with you!
Blan. And to what purpose, sir? —
No longer in your power — perhaps, nor will —
To do as well as talk.
Men. If but to say
How to my heart it goes seeing you still
As sad as when I left you years ago.
Blan. "As sad? — as when you left me years ago" —
I understand you not — am not aware
I ever saw you till to-day.
Men. Ah, Blanca,
Have pity!
Blan. Nay, Don Mendo, let us cease
A conversation, uselessly begun,
To end in nothing. If your memory
Out of some dreamt-of fragments of the past,

Digitized by Google

Attach to me, the past is dead in time;
Let it be buried in oblivion.

Men. Oh, with what courage, Blanca, do you wield
Your ready woman's wit!

Blan. I know not why
You should say that.

Men. But *I* know.

Blan. If 't be so,
Agree with me to say no more of it.

Men. But how?

Blan. By simple silence.

Men. How be silent
Under such pain?

Blan. By simple suffering.

Men. Oh, Blanca, how learn that?

Blan. Of me — and thus.
Beatrice!

Enter BEATRICE.

Beat. Madam?

Blan. Light Don Mendo to
His chamber. Thus be further trouble sped.

Men. Nay, rather coals of fire heap'd on my head!

[*Exeunt severally.*

Digitized by Google

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Room in* URREA'S *House.— Enter* URREA *and* BLANCA *on one side, and* LOPE *and* VICENTE *on the other.*

Lope. THRICE blessed be the day that brings me back
In all humility and love, my father,
To kiss your feet once more.
Urr. Rise up, my son,
As welcome to your parents as long lookt for.
Rise and embrace me.
Lope. Till I have your hand
I scarcely dare.
Urr. Then take it, Lope — there —
And may God make thee virtuous as thy father
Can pray for thee. Thy mother too —
Lope. O madam,
I scarcely dare with anguish and repentance
Lift up my eyes to those I have made weep
So many bitter tears —
Blan. You see, my son,
You keep them weeping still — not bitter tears,
But tears of joy — Oh, welcome home again!
Vic. Where is there any room for a poor devil
Who has done penance upon rock and water
This many a day, and much repents him of
His former sins?

Digitized by Google

Urr. What you alive too?

Vic. Yes, sir, [beast
This saddle's pad, *(showing* LOPE,) or, if you like, the
That bears the saddle — or, by another rule,—
That where the cat jumps also goes her tail.

Lope (to his father). You see, sir, in such godly company
I must repent.

Vic. Why, devil take 't —

Urr. What, swearing?

Vic. But some poor relic of our former life
That yet will stick. Madam, permit me,
If not to kiss your hand, nor ev'n your feet,
At least the happy ground on which they walk.

Blan. Rise, rise. How can I less than welcome one
Who has so loyally stood by my son,
Through evil and through good?

Vic. A monument
As one might say, madam, *ad perpetuam*
Fidelis Amicitiæ Memoriam.

Enter BEATRICE.

Beat. What! is my master home? Then, by the saints,
Saving your presence, and before your faces,
I must embrace him.

Lope. Thanks, good Beatrice.

Digitized by Google

Urr. You see how all rejoice to see you, Lope,
But none so more than I; believe 't. But now
'T is time you wait on Mendo, and acknowledge
The kindness he has done us. See, Beatrice,
If he be in his room, or busy there. [*Exit* BEATRICE.
Meanwhile, my son, I crave one patient hearing
To what I have to say.

Vic. Now for a lecture.

Lope. Silence, sir! Coming here, we must expect
And bear such things. Pray speak, sir.

Urr. You see, Lope,
(And doubtless must have heard of it before,)
In what ill plight we are: my property,
What yet remains of it, embroil'd and hamper'd,
And all so little, that this last expense,
Of getting (as I have) your Estifania,
Who has already cost us all so much,
Into a convent; to do this, I say,
I have been forc'd to let my house for hire
To my old friend; yea, almost, I assure you,
To beg from door to door. Enough of that.
'T is done; and you are now at last restor'd
To home, and station — wealth I cannot say —
But all is well that ends well. All I ask,
(And 't is with tears and with a broken voice
I ask it: I would ask it on my knees
If these white hairs forbade not such descent,)

Digitized by Google

That from this day, in pity to us all —
Perhaps in gratitude — you would repent
Your past excess; yea, surfeited with that,
Would henceforth tame your headlong passions down
Into a quiet current. Help me, son,
Rebuild the shaken credit of our house,
And show — let us *both* show — that misery
Has taught us not in vain. Let us be friends
Henceforth; no rivalry of love or hate
Between us; each doing what in him lies
To make what may remain of life to each
Happy and honourable. On my part
I stake a father's love and tenderness;
And will not you as freely on your side
Wager your filial obedience?
Your father asks, implores you. Oh, consider
You may not always have a friend in need
To rescue you as now: nay, disappoint
His mercy and again provoke the laws
He now remits, that friend may turn to foe
And sacrifice the life he vainly spar'd.

Vic. There only wants, "in sæcula sæculorum,"
To finish off with.

Lopc. Sir, I promise you
Amendment, that shall make the past a foil
To set the future off.

Digitized by Google

Enter MENDO.

Men. I come in time
To vouch fulfilment of so fair a vow.
Lope. Oh, sir —
Men. I knew you on your road to me;
Your errand too; and thus much have forestall'd
Of needless courtesy.
Lope. Pray God reward you
With such advancement in your prince's love
As envy, the court Hydra, shall not hiss,
But general love and acclamation
Write in gold letters in our history,
For ages and for ages. Sir, your hand!
Men. My heart, my heart, you shame me by your thanks,
For service that the veriest churl had paid
For what you did me, Lope.
Why, I 'm your debtor still. But now, enough!
I cannot steal more time from business;
The king expects me.
Urr. I too must abroad.
Lope. Would I could wait on both — but, as it is,
I think my father's self would waive his right,
In favour of our common benefactor.
Urr. Indeed, indeed, I do rejoice you should.

[*Exit with* BLANCA.

Digitized by Google

Men. And I, not knowing if your choice be right,
Know that I would not lose you for a moment,
So glad your presence makes me. [*Exit with* LOPE.

Vic. Beatrice! Beatrice![1]

Beat. Well?

Vic. Think you not, now that our principals are fairly out of the way, you owe me a kiss on my arrival?

Beat. Ay, hot from the oven.

Vic. Ah Beatrice! if you only knew what heart-aches you 've cost me.

Beat. You indeed, robbing and murdering, and I don't know what beside, up in the mountains! and then my new madam that 's come with you, Donna Violante; with her fine Elvira,— I know, sir, when your master was courting his mistress, you —

Vic. Now, my own Beatrice, if you could only know what you are talking of as well as I, how little jealousy could such a creature as that give you!

Beat. Well — but why?

Vic. Not a woman at all, neither maid nor mer-maid—Why, did n't I catch her with all those fine locks of hers clean off her head?

Beat. Clean off her head!

Vic. The woman 's bald.

[1] Vicente's flirtation with the two Criadas, and its upshot, is familiar to English play-goers in the comedy of "The Wonder."

Digitized by Google

Beat. Bald!

Vic. As my hand! besides, all that fine white *chevaux-de-frise* that ornaments her gums.

Beat. Well?

Vic. All sham.

Beat. What, my fine madam there false teeth!

Vic. Oh, and half a dozen villainous things I could tell you, did it become a gentleman to tell tales of ladies. But see, here is master coming back.

Beat. Good bye then, for the present, Vicente. False teeth and a wig! [*Exit.*

Enter DON LOPE.

Lope. Vicente, have you by any chance seen Violante?

Vic. Not that I know of, sir; she may however have passed without my knowing her.

Lope. Vicente still! As if it were possible one who had once seen such beauty could ever forget it.

Vic. Why, sir, if her maid Elvira happened to be by her side —

Lope. Fool!

Vic. Pray is it impossible in the system of things that the maid should be handsomer than the mistress?

Lope. Oh could I but see her!

Vic. Take care, take care, sir. Beware of raising the old devil — and now we are but just out of the frying-pan —

Digitized by Google

Lope. Beware *you*, sir! I tell you I ill liked my father's lecture; do not you read me another. It were best that no one crossed me, or by heaven!— But who comes here?

Vic. Don Guillen de Azagra.

Enter DON GUILLEN.

Lope. What?
Ask what reward you will of me, Vicente.
Don Guillen de Azagra back again!

Guil. And could not wait a moment, hearing you
Were also back, Don Lope, till I found you,
As well to give you welcome as receive it.

Lope. Our old affection asks for nothing less
On both sides. Oh, you are welcome! [between

Guil. Well can he come, who comes half dead
Dead hope and quickening passion!

Lope. How is that?

Guil. Why, you remember how three years ago
I went to Naples — to the wars there?

Lope. Yes,
We parted, I remember, sadly enough
On both sides, in the Plaza del Aseo,
Unconsciously divining the sad days
That were about to dawn on one of us.

Guil. Nay, upon both. I am no stranger, Lope,
To your misfortunes; and Heav'n knows I felt them!

Digitized by Google

But they are over, Heav'n be thankt! mine yet
Are sadly acting. You can help me now,
If not to conquer, to relieve them.
Lope. Ay,
And will strain every nerve for you. But first
Must hear your story.
Guil. Well — I went to Naples,
Where, as you know, our King by force of arms
Was eager to revenge the shameful death
Of Norandino, whom the king of Naples
Had on the scaffold treacherously murder'd.
Of which, and Naples too, I say no more
Than this; that, entering the city,
I saw a lady in whom the universe
Of beauty seem'd to centre; as it might be
The sun's whole light into a single beam,
The heavenly dawn into one drop of dew,
Or the whole breathing spring into one rose.
You will believe I lov'd not without cause,
When you have heard the lady that I speak of
Is —
Vic. Donna Violante!
Lope. Knave and fool!
Vic. Why so, sir! only for telling you I saw the lady coming this way; but, I suppose, seeing people here, she has turned back.

Digitized by Google

Lope. Will you retire awhile, Don Guillen? this lady is my father's guest.

Guil. (aside). Beside, she might be angry finding me here. [*Exit.*

Lope. 'Fore Heaven, my mind misgave me it was she he spoke of!

Vic. Well, you have got the weather-gage. Tackle her now.

Enter VIOLANTE *and* ELVIRA.

Lope. Nay, lady, turn not back. What you, the sun
I see by, to abridge my little day
By enviously returning to the west
As soon as ris'n, and prematurely drawing
The veil of night over the blush of dawn!
Oh, let me not believe I fright you now,
As yesterday I did, fair Violante,
Arm'd among savage rocks with savage men,
From whose rude company your eyes alone
Have charm'd me, and subdued for the first time
A fierce, unbridled will.

Viol. It were not strange,
Don Lope, if my bosom trembled still
With that first apparition. But in truth
I had not hesitated,
Had I not seen, or fancied, at your side
Another stranger.

Digitized by Google

Lope. Oh, a friend; and one
Who spoke with me of *you;* nay, who retired
Only for fear of drawing new disdain
Upon old love; and left me here indeed,
To speak in his behalf.
Viol. Alas, Elvira,
Was 't not Don Guillen?
Elv. Yes.
Viol. Don Lope plead
Another's, and Don Guillen's love!
(She is going.)
Lope. At least
Let me attend you to my mother's door.
Viol. Nay, stay, sir.
Lope. Stay! and lose my life in losing
This happy opportunity!
Viol. Are life
And opportunity the same?
Lope. So far,
That neither lost ever return again.
Viol. If you have aught to tell me, tell it here
Before I go.
Lope. Only to ask if you
Confess yourself no debtor to a heart
That long has sigh'd for you?
Viol. You, sir, are then
Pleading another's cause?

Digitized by Google

Lope. I might be shy
To plead in my own person — a reserve
That love oft feels — and pardons.
Viol. 'T is in vain.
I will not own to an account of sighs
Drawn up against me without my consent;
So tell your friend; and tell him he mistakes
The way to payment making you, of all,
His agent in the cause.
Lope. Nay, nay, but wait.
Viol. No more — Adieu! [*Exit.*
Lope. She thought I only us'd
Another's suit as cover to my own,
And cunningly my seeming cunning turns
Against myself. But I will after her;
If Don Guillen come back, tell him, Vicente,
I 'll wait upon him straight. [*Exit.*

Vic. Madam Elvira!

Elv. Well, Monsieur Cut-throat?

Vic. Well, you are not scared at my face now?

Elv. I don't know that — your face remains as it was.

Vic. Come, come, my queen, do me a little favour.

Elv. Well, what is that?

Vic. Just only die for love of me; I always make a point of never asking impossibilities of any woman.

Digitized by Google

Elv. Love is out of the question! I perhaps might *like* you, did I not know the lengths you go with that monkey Beatrice.

Vic. With whom?

Elv. I say with Beatrice. Bystanders see as much, sir, as players.

Vic. I with Beatrice! Lord! lord! if you only knew half what I know, Elvira, you 'd not be jealous of her.

Elv. Why, what do you know of her?

Vic. A woman who, could she breed at all, would breed foxes and stoats—a tolerable outside, but only, only go near her—Foh! such a breath! beside other peculiarities I don't mention out of respect to the sex. But this I tell you, one of those sparkling eyes of hers is glass, and her right leg a wooden one.

Elv. Nonsense!

Vic. Only you look, and see if she don't limp on one side, and squint on the other.

Don Guillen (entering at one side). I can wait no longer.

Don Lope (entering at the other). It is no use; she is shut up with my mother. Now for Don Guillen.

Elv. They are back.

Vic. We 'll settle our little matter by and by.

Elv. Glass eyes and wooden legs! [*Exit.*

Lope (To DON GUILLEN). Forgive my leaving you so long; I have been

Digitized by Google

Waiting on one who is my father's guest,
The lady Violante.
Guil. So sweet duty
Needs no excuse.
Lope. Now to pursue your story —
Guil. Ah — where did I leave off?
Lope. About the truce
Making at Naples, when you saw a lady —
Guil. Ay, but I must remember one thing, Lope,
Most memorable of all. The ambassador
Empower'd to treat on our good king's behalf
Was Mendo de Torellas, whose great wisdom
And justice, both grown grey in state affairs,
Well fitted him for such authority;
Which telling you, and telling you beside,
That when the treaty made, and he left Naples,
I left it too, still following in his wake
The track of a fair star who went with him
To Saragossa, to their very house —
Telling you this, I tell you all — tell who
My lady is — his daughter — Violante,
Before whose shrine my life and soul together
Are but poor offerings to consecrate. [our pigs to!
Vic. (aside). A pretty market we have brought
Who 'll bet upon the winner?
Lope (aside). Oh confusion!
But let us drain the cup at once. Don Guillen,

Digitized by Google

Your admiration and devotedness
Needed the addition of no name to point
Their object out. But tell me,
Ere I advise with you, how far your prayer
Is answer'd by your deity?
Guil. Alas!
Two words will tell —
Lope. And those?
Guil. Love unreturn'd!
Or worse, return'd with hate.
Vic. (aside). Come, that looks better.
Guil. My love for her has now no hope, Don Lope,
But in your love for me. She is your guest,
And I as such, beside my joy in you,
May catch a ray of her — may win you even
To plead for me in such another strain
As has not yet wearied her ears in vain;
Or might you not ev'n now, as she returns,
Give her a letter from me; lest if first
She see, or hear from others of my coming,
She may condemn my zeal for persecution,
And make it matter of renew'd disdain.
I 'll write the letter now, and bring it to you
Ere she be back. [*Exit.*
Vic. (To LOPE). Good bye, sir.
Lope. Whither now,
Vicente?

Digitized by Google

Vic. To the mountains — I am sure
You 'll soon be after me.
Lope. I understand —
But stay awhile.
True, I love Violante, and resent
Don Guillen's rivalry: but he 's my friend —
Confides to me a passion myself own,
And cannot blame.
Wait we awhile, Vicente, and perhaps
A way will open through the labyrinth
Without our breaking through.
Vic. How glad I am
To see you take 't so patiently! Now, sir,
Would you be rul'd —
Lope. What then?
Vic. Why simply, sir,
Forget the lady — but a few days' flame,
And then —
Lope. Impossible!
Vic. What 's to be done then?
Lope. I know not — But she comes.

Enter VIOLANTE.

Viol. Still here, Don Lope!
Lope. Ah, what in nature will its centre leave,
Or, forc'd away, recoils not faster still!
So rivers yearn along their murmuring beds

Digitized by Google

Until they reach the sea; the pebble thrown
Ever so high, still faster falls to earth;
Wind follows wind, and not a flame struck out
Of heavy wood or flint, but it aspires
Upward at once and to its proper sphere.

Viol. All good philosophy, I make no doubt,
But how apply it here?

Lope. How easily!
Your beauty being that to which my soul
Ever flies fastest, and most slowly leaves.

Viol. Surely this sudden rapture ill agrees
With what I heard before.

Lope. How, Violante?

Viol. Have you not haply chang'd parts in the farce,
And ris'n from second character to first?

Lope. My second did not please you — come what will,
Casting feign'd speech and character aside,
I 'll e'en speak for myself in my own person.
Listen to me — Don Guillen —

Guil. (listening at the side). Just a moment
To hear him plead my cause.

Lope. Following your beauty, as a flower the sun,
Has come from Italy to Aragon,
And, as my friend, by me entreats of you
To let him plead his suit.

Digitized by Google

Guil. Would, I could stay
To hear the noble Lope plead my cause,
But summon'd hence— [*Exit.*
Viol. Ill does your second part
Excuse your ill performance of the first;
One failure might be pardon'd, but two such
Are scarce to be excus'd.
Lope. Oh, tell me then
Which chiefly needs apology!
Viol. I will.
First for your friend Don Guillen; bid him cease
All compliment and courtship, knowing well
How all has been rejected hitherto,
And will hereafter, to the ruthless winds.
Lope. And on the second count — my own?
Viol. How easily
Out of his answer you may draw your own!
Lope. Alas!
Viol. For when the judge has to pronounce
Sentence on two defendants, like yourselves,
Whose charge is both alike, and bids the one
Report his condemnation to the other;
'T is plain —
Lope. That both must suffer?
Viol. Nay, if so
The judge had made one sentence serve for both.
Lope. Great Heavens!

Digitized by Google

Guil. (listening at the side). The man dismissed,
I 'll hear the rest.
Viol. Oh, let it be enough to tell you now
The heart that once indeed was adamant,
Resisting all impression — but at last
Ev'n adamant you know —
Guil. Oh, she relents!
Lope. Oh, let me kiss those white hands for those words!
Guil. Excellent friend! he could not plead more warmly
Were 't for himself.
Lope. Oh for some little token
To vouch, when you have vanisht from my eyes,
That all was not a dream!
Viol. (giving him a rose). This rose, whose hue
Is of the same that should my cheek imbue! [*Exit.*

Enter GUILLEN.

Guil. Oh how twice welcome is my lady's favour,
Sent to me by the hand of such a friend!
How but in such an attitude as this
Dare I receive it? *(Kneels.)*
Lope. Rise, Don Guillen, rise —
Flowers are but fading favours that a breath
Can change and wither.
Guil. What mean you by this?

Digitized by Google

Lope. Only that though the flower in my hands
Is fresh from Violante's, I must tell you
It must not pass to yours.
Guil. Did I not hear you
Pleading my cause?
Lope. You might —
Guil. And afterwards,
When I came back again, herself confess
That, marble as she had been to my vows,
She now relented tow'rd me!
Lope. If you did,
'T would much disprove the listener's adage.
Guil. How?
Lope. You set your ears to such a lucky tune,
As took in all the words that made for you,
But not the rest that did complete the measure.
Guil. But did not Violante, when you urg'd her
In my behalf, say she relented?
Lope. Yes.
Guil. To whom then?
Lope. To myself.
Vic. The cat 's unbagg'd!
Guil. To you!
Lope. To me.
Guil. Don Lope, you must see
That ev'n my friendship for you scarce can stomach
Such words — or credit them.

Digitized by Google

Lope. Let him beware
Who doubts my words, stomach them as he can.
Guil. But 't is a jest—
Bearing my happy fortune in your hands,
You only, as old love has leave to do,
Tantalise ere you give it me. Enough,
Give me the rose.
Lope. I cannot, being just
Given to me, and for me.
Guil. His it is
Whose right it is, and that is mine; and I
Will have it.
Lope. If you can.
Guil. Then follow me,
Where (not in your own house) I may chastise
The friendship that must needs have play'd me false
One way or other. [*Exit.*
Lope. Lead the way then, sir.

Enter hurriedly DONNA BLANCA *and* VIOLANTE *from opposite sides.*

Viol. Don Lope, what is this?
Lope. Nothing, Violante.
Viol. I heard your angry voices in my room,
And could not help —

Digitized by Google

Blan. And I too. O my son,
Scarce home with us, and all undone already!
Where are you going?

Lope. No where; nothing; leave me.

Viol. Tell me the quarrel — Oh! I dread to hear.

Lope. What quarrel, lady? let me go — your fears
Deceive you.

Blan. Lope, not an hour of peace
When you are here!

Lope. Nay, madam, why accuse me,
Before you know the cause?

Enter URREA.

Urr. How now? — disputing?
Blanca and Violante too? What is it?

Blan. Oh, nothing! (I must keep it from his father.)
Nothing — he quarrell'd with Vicente here,
And would have beat him — and we interposed;
Indeed, no more.

Vic. The blame is sure to fall
Upon my shoulders.

Urr. Is 't not very strange,
Your disposition, Lope? never at peace
With others or yourself.

Lope. 'T is nothing, sir.

Vic. He quarrell'd with me, sir, about some money

Digitized by Google

He thought he ought to have, and could n't find it
In his breeches' pocket.

Urr. Go, go — get you gone, knave.

Vic. Always fair words from you at any rate. *(Aside.)*

Urr. And for such trifles, Lope, you disturb
My house, affright your mother and her guest
With your mad passion.

Lope. I can only, sir,
Answer such charge by silence, and retire.
Now for Don Guillen. [*Exit.*

Blan. Oh let him not go!

Urr. Why not? 't is a good riddance. Violante,
You must excuse this most unseemly riot
Close to your chamber. My unruly son,
When his mad passion 's rous'd, neither respects
Person or place.

Viol. Nay, sir, I pardon him.
And should, for I 'm the cause! *(Aside.)*

Blan. Ah, wretched I,
Who, by the very means I would prevent
His going forth, have op'd the door to him.

(Noise within of swords, and the voices of LOPE *and* GUILLEN *fighting.)*

Urr. What noise is that again?

Digitized by Google

Enter ELVIRA.

Elv. 'T is in the street.

Enter BEATRICE.

Beat. Oh, my young master fighting — run, sir, run!

Urr. And 't is for this I 've sacrific'd myself!

Enter, fighting, LOPE *and* GUILLEN; *Gentlemen and others trying to part them.*

Urr. (going between them). Hold, Lope! Hold, Don Guillen!

Voices. Part them! part them!

Guil. Traitor!

Lope. Traitor! — I say that he 's the traitor Whoever —

Urr. Madman, will you not forbear When your grey-headed father holds your sword!

Lope. And in so doing robs me of the honour I never got from him.

Urr. Oh! ruffian! But if this graceless son respect me not, His father, my white hairs appeal to you, Don Guillen.

Guil. And shall not appeal in vain — Out of respect, sir, for your age and name, And for these gentlemen who interpose,

Digitized by Google

I shall refer the issue of this quarrel
To other time and place.
Lope. A good excuse
For fear to hide in.
Guil. Fear!
Urr. Madman! again!
That the respect his rival shows to me
Should make my son despise him. By these heav'ns
This staff shall teach you better.
Lope. Strike me not!
Beware — beware!
Urr. Why, art thou not asham'd —
Lope. Yes, of respect for you that 's fear of me.
Guil. Whoever says or thinks what I have done
Is out of fear of you, I say —
Urr. He lies!
I 'll top your sentence for you.
Lope. Then take thou
The answer! *(Strikes* URREA, *who falls; confusion.)*
A voice. What have you done?
Another. Help, help!
Voices. After him, after him! — the parricide!
(LOPE *rushes out and the people after him.)*
Guil. I know not how to leave the poor old man —
Come, let me help you, sir.
Urr. Parricide!
May outrag'd Heaven that has seen thy crime,

Digitized by Google

Witness my curse, and crush thee! Every sword
That every pious hand against thee draws,
Caught up by the revenging elements,
Turn thunderbolt, (as every weapon shall
Drawn in God's cause,) and reach thee to the centre!
That sacrilegious hand which thou hast rais'd
Against this snow-white head — how shall it face
Heaven's judgment bar; yea, how can Heav'n now
Behold this deed, nor quench its visual sun,
Veil its pure infinite blue with awful cloud,
And with a terrified eclipse of things
Confound the air you breathe, the light you see,
The ground you walk on!

Guil. Pray, sir, compose yourself—
Your cloak — your staff —

Urr. My staff! what use is that?
When it is steel that must avenge my wrong!
Yet give it me — fit instrument
Wherewith to chastise a rebellious child —
Ay, and he did not use his sword on me,
Mark that, nor I on him — give me my staff.
Alas, alas! and I with no strength left
To wield it, only as I halt along,

Digitized by Google

Feeling about with it to find a grave,
And knocking at deaf earth to let me in.[1]
Guil. Nay, calm yourself,
The population of the place is up
After the criminal.
Urr. And to what purpose?
They cannot wipe away my shame by that.
Call them back rather
To gaze upon a man disgrac'd,
Disgrac'd by him to whom he gave a being.
I say, behold me all — the wretched man
By his own flesh and blood insulted, and
On his own flesh and blood crying Revenge!
Revenge! revenge! revenge!
Not to the Heavens only, nor to Him
Who sits in judgment there, do I appeal,

[1] Como me podrè vengar
Si aquel, que me ha de ayudar
A sustentarme, me advierte
Que armado en la tierra dura
Solo ha de irme aprovechando
De aldaba, con que ir llamando
A mi misma sepultura?

Ne dethe, alas! ne wolle not my life;
Thus walke I like a restlesse caytiffe,
And on the grounde, which is my moder's gayte,
I knocke with my staffe erlich and late,
And sayn thus, "Leve moder, let me yn."
Chaucer's Pardoner's Tale.

Digitized by Google

But to the powers of earth.—Give me my hat,
I 'll to the king forthwith.

Vic. Consider, sir;
You would not enter in the palace gates
So suddenly, and in this plight?

Urr. Why not,
Whose voice should leap the glittering walls of Heaven,
And unannounced and uninvited enter
The palace doors of God —
King Pedro! king of Aragon! Christian king!
Whom fools the Cruel call, and Just the wise,
I call on you, King Pedro [1] —

King (entering with MENDO *and Train).* Who calls the king?

Urr. A wretch who, falling at your feet, implores
Your royal justice.

King. I remember you;
Don Lope de Urrea, whose son I pardon'd.
What would you of me?

Urr. That you would, my king,
Unpardon him you pardon'd; draw on him

[1] The Biographie Universelle says it was Don Pedro of *Castile* about whose cognomen there was some difference of opinion; a defence of him being written in 1648 by Count de Roca, ambassador from Spain to Venice, entitled, "El Rey Don Pedro, llamado el Cruel, el Justiciero, y el Necessitado, defendido." It is he, I suppose, figures in the "Medico de su Honra." He flourished at the same time, however, with his namesake of Aragon.

Digitized by Google

The disappointed sword of justice down.
That son — *my son* — if he indeed be mine —
(Oh, Blanca, pure as the first blush of day
Blush'd not to be so pure,
Pardon me such a word!) has, after all
My pain and sacrifice in his behalf;
Has, in defiance of the laws of man
And God, and of that great commandment, which,
Though fifth on the two tables, yet comes first
After God's jealous honour is secur'd,
Has struck me — struck his father — in a fray
Wherein that father tried to save his life.
I have no vindication; *will* have none,
But at your hands and by your laws; unless,
If you deny me that, I do appeal
Unto the King of kings to do me justice;
Which I will have, that heav'n and earth may know
How a bad son begets a ruthless sire!

King. Mendo!

Men. My liege.

King. I must again refer
This cause to you. (*To* URREA.) Where is your son?

Urr. Fled! fled!

King (to MENDO). After him then, use all the powers I own
To bring the wretch to justice. See me not
Till that be done.

Digitized by Google

Men. I 'll do my best, my liege.

King. I have it most at heart. In all the rolls
Of history, I know of no like quarrel:
And the first judgment on it shall be done
By the Fourth Pedro, king of Aragon.

[*Exeunt severally.*

ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Wild Place.—Enter* MENDO *and Officers of Justice armed.*

1st Officer. HERE, my lord, where the Ebro, swollen with her mountain streams, runs swiftest, he will try to escape.

Men. Hunt for him then, leaving neither rock nor thicket unexplored. *(They disperse.)*
Oh, what a fate is mine,
Seeking for that which most I dread to find,
Once thought the curse of Jealousy alone!
The iron king will see my face no more
Unless I bring Don Lope to his feet:
Whom, on the other hand, my gratitude
And love would save from justice.
Oh, how —

Digitized by Google

Enter some, fighting with DON LOPE.

Lope. I know I cannot save my life,
But I will sell it dear.

Men. Hold off! the king
Will have him taken, but not slain. *(Aside.)* And I,
Can I but save him now, shall find a mean
Hereafter.
Don Lope!

Lope. I should know that voice; the face
I cannot, blind with fury, dust, and blood.
Or was 't the echo of some inner voice,
Some far off thunder of the memory,
That moves me more than all these fellows' swords!
Is it Don Mendo?

Men. Who demands of you
Your sword, and that you yield in the king's name.

Lope. I yield?

Men. Ay, sir, what can you do beside?

Lope. Slaying be slain. And yet my heart relents
Before your voice; and now I see your face
My eyes dissolve in tears. Why, how is this?
What charm is on my sword?

Men. 'T is but the effect
And countenance of justice that inspires
Involuntary awe in the offender.

Lope. Not that. Delinquent as I am, I could,
With no more awe of justice than a mad dog,

Digitized by Google

Bite right and left among her officers;
But 't is yourself alone: to you alone
Do I submit myself; yield up my sword
Already running with your people's blood,
And at your feet —

Men. Rise, Lope. Heaven knows
How gladly would your judge change place with you
The criminal; far happier to endure
Your peril than my own anxiety.
But do not you despair, however stern
Tow'rds you I carry me before the world.
The king is so enrag'd —

Lope. What, he has heard!

Men. Your father cried for vengeance at his feet.

Lope. Where is my sword?

Men. In vain. 'T is in my hand.

Lope. Where somehow it affrights me — as before
When giving you my dagger, it turn'd on me
With my own blood.

Mendo. Ho there!
Cover Don Lope's face, and carry him
To prison after me. *(Aside.)* Hark, in your ear,
Conduct him swiftly, and with all secrecy,
To my own house — in by the private door,
Without his knowing whither,
And bid my people watch and wait on him.

Digitized by Google

I 'll to the king — Alas, what agony,
I know not what, grows on me more and more !
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A Room in the Palace.—Enter* KING.

King. Don Mendo comes not back, and must not come,
Till he have done his errand. I myself
Can have no rest till justice have her due.
A son to strike his father in my realm
Unaw'd, and then unpunisht !
But by great Heav'n the law shall be aveng'd
So long as I shall reign in Aragon.
Don Mendo !

Enter MENDO.

Mendo. Let me kiss your Highness' hand —

King. Welcome, thou other Atlas of my realm,
Who shar'st the weight with me. For I doubt not,
Coming thus readily into my presence,
You bring Don Lope with you.

Men. Yes, my liege —
Fast prisoner in my house, that none may see
Or talk with him.

King. Among your services
You have not done a better.
The crime is strange, 't is fit the sentence on it
Be memorably just.

Digitized by Google

Men. Most true, my liege,
Who I am sure will not be warp'd away
By the side current of a first report,
But on the whole broad stream of evidence
Move to conclusion. I do *know* this charge
Is not so grave as was at first reported. [smote

King. But is not thus much clear — that a son
His father?

Men. Yes, my liege.

King. And can a charge
Be weightier?

Men. I confess the naked fact,
But 't is the special cause and circumstance
That give the special colour to the crime.

King. I shall be glad to have my kingdom freed
From the dishonour of so foul a deed
By any extenuation.

Men. Then I think
Your majesty shall find it here. 'T is thus:
Don Lope, on what ground I do not know,
Fights with Don Guillen — in the midst o' the fray,
Comes old Urrea, at the very point
When Guillen was about to give the lie
To his opponent — which the old man, enrag'd
At such unseemly riot in his house,
Gives for him; calls his son a fouler name
Than gentleman can bear, and in the scuffle

Digitized by Google

Receives a blow that in his son's blind rage
Was aim'd abroad — in the first heat of passion
Throws himself at your feet, and calls for vengeance,
Which, as I hear, he now repents him of.
He 's old and testy — age's common fault —
And, were not this enough to lame swift justice,
There 's an old law in Aragon, my liege,
That in our courts father and son shall not
Be heard in evidence against each other;
In which provision I would fain persuade you
Bury this quarrel.

King. And this seems just to you?

Men. It does, my liege.

King. Then not to me, Don Mendo,
Who will examine, sentence, and record,
Whether in such a scandal to the realm
The son be guilty of impiety,
Or the sire idle to accuse him of 't.
Therefore I charge you have Urrea too
From home to-night, and guarded close alone;
It much imports the business.

Men. I will, my liege. [*Exeunt severally.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE III. *A Corridor in* URREA'S *House, with three doors in front.— Enter from a side door* VIOLANTE *and* ELVIRA.

Viol. Ask me no more, Elvira; I cannot answer when my thoughts are all locked up where Lope lies.

Elv. And know you where that is? Nearer than you think; there, in my lord your father's room.

Viol. There! Oh, could I but save him!

Elv. You can at least comfort him.

Viol. Something must be done. Either I will save his life, Elvira, or die with him. Have you the key?

Elv. I have one; my lord has the master-key.

Viol. Yours will do, give it me. I am desperate, Elvira, and in his danger drown my maiden shame; see him I will at least. Do you rest here and give me a warning if a footstep come. *(She enters centre door.)*

SCENE IV. *An inner Chamber in* URREA'S *House.—* LOPE *discovered.*

Lope. Whither then have they brought me? Ah, Violante,
Your beauty costs me dear! And even now
I count the little I have yet to live
Minute by minute, like one last sweet draught,
But for your sake. Nay, 't is not life I care for,
But only Violante.

Digitized by Google

Violante (entering unseen). Oh, his face
Is bathed in his own blood; he has been wounded.
Don Lope!
Lope. Who is it calls on a name
I thought all tongues had buried in its shame?
Viol. One who yet — pities you.
Lope (turning and seeing her). Am I then dead,
And thou some living spirit come to meet me
Upon the threshold of another world;
Or some dead image that my living brain
Draws from remembrance on the viewless air,
And gives the voice I love to? Oh, being here,
Whatever thou may'st be, torment me not
By vanishing at once.
Viol. No spirit, Lope,
And no delusive image of the brain;
But one who, wretched in your wretchedness,
And partner of the crime you suffer for,
All risk of shame and danger cast away,
Has come — but hark! — I may have but a moment —
The door I came by will be left unlockt
To-night, and you must fly.
Lope. Oh, I have heard
Of a fair flower of such strange quality,
It makes a wound where there was none before,
And heals what wound there was. Oh, Violante,

Digitized by Google

You who first made an unscath'd heart to bleed,
Now save a desperate life!

Viol. And I have heard
Of two yet stranger flowers that, severally,
Each in its heart a deadly poison holds,
Which, if they join, turns to a sovereign balm.
And so with us, who in our bosoms bear
A passion which destroys us when apart,
But when together—

Elv. (calling within). Madam! madam! your father!

Viol. Farewell!

Lope. But you return?

Viol. To set you free.

Lope. That as it may; only return to me.

[*Exit* VIOLANTE, *leaving* LOPE.

SCENE V. *Same as* SCENE III. ELVIRA *waiting*—
Enter VIOLANTE *from centre door.*

Viol. Quick! lock the door, Elvira, and away with me on wings. My father must not find me here.

Elv. Nay, you need not be frightened, he has gone to my lady Blanca's room by the way.

Viol. No matter, he must not find me; I would learn too what is stirring in the business.

Oh would I ever drag my purpose through,
I must be desperate and cautious too. [*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

Elv. (locking the door). Well, that 's all safe, and now myself to hear what news is stirring.

Vicente (talking as he enters). In the devil's name was there ever such a clutter made about a blow? People all up in arms, and running here and there, and up and down, and every where, as if the great Tom of Velilla was a ringing.

Elv. Vicente! what 's the matter?

Vic. Oh, a very great matter, Elvira. I am very much put out indeed.

Elv. What about, and with whom?

Vic. With all the world, and my two masters, the young and old one, especially.

Elv. But about what?

Vic. With the young one for being so ready with his fists, and the old one bawling out upon it to heaven and earth, and then Madam Blanca, she must join in the chorus too; and then your grand Don Mendo there, with whom seizing 's so much in season, he has seized my master, and my master's father, and Don Guillen, and clapt them all up in prison. Then I 've a quarrel with the king!

Elv. With the king! You must be drunk, Vicente.

Vic. I only wish I was.

Elv. But what has the king done?

Vic. Why, let me be beaten at least fifty thousand times, without caring a jot: and now forsooth because

Digitized by Google

an old fellow gets a little push, his eyes flash axe and gibbet. Then, Elvira, I 'm very angry with you.

Elv. And why with me?

Vic. Because, desperately in love with me as you are, you never serenade me, nor write me a billet-doux, nor ask me for a kiss of my fair hand.

Elv. Have I not told you, sir, I leave that all to Beatrice? [hang for me?

Vic. And have I not told you, Beatrice may go

Elv. Oh, Vicente, could I believe you!

Vic. Come, give me a kiss on credit of it; in case I lie, I 'll pay you back.

Elv. Well, for this once.

Enter BEATRICE.

Beat. The saints be praised, I 've found you at last!

Vic. Beatrice!

Elv. Well, what 's the matter?

Vic. You 'll soon see.

Beat. Oh, pray proceed, proceed, good folks. Never mind me: you 've business — don't interrupt it — I 've seen quite enough, besides being quite indifferent who wears my cast-off shoes.

Elv. I beg to say, madam, I wear no shoes except my own, and if I *were* reduc'd to other people's, certainly should not choose those that are made for a wooden leg.

Digitized by Google

Beat. A wooden leg? Pray, madam, what has a wooden leg to do with me? [feelings.

Elv. Oh, madam, I must refer you to your own

Beat. I tell you, madam, these hands should tear your hair up by the roots, if it had roots to tear.

Vic. Now for her turn.

Elv. Why, does she mean to insinuate my hair is as false as that left eye of hers?

Beat. Do you mean to insinuate my left eye is

Elv. Ay; and say it to your teeth. [false?

Beat. More, madam, than I ever could say to yours, unless, indeed, you 've *paid*, madam, for the set you wear.

Elv. Have you the face to say my teeth are false?

Beat. Have *you* the face to say my eye 's of glass?

Elv. I 'll teach you to say I wear a wig. [occasion.

Beat. Would that my leg *were* wood just for the

Vic. Ladies, ladies, first consider where we are.

Beat. Oh ho! I think I begin to understand.

Elv. Oh, and so methinks do I.

Beat. It is this wretch —

Elv. This knave —

Beat. This rascal —

Elv. This vagabond —

Beat. Has told all these lies.

Elv. Has done all this mischief.

(They set upon and pinch him, &c.)

Spoken together.

Digitized by Google

Vic. Ladies, ladies — Mercy! oh! ladies! just listen! [people coming —

Elv. Listen indeed! If it were not that I hear

Vic. Heaven be praised for it!

Beat. We will defer the execution then — And in the mean while shall we two sign a treaty of peace?

Elv. My hand to it — Agreed!

Beat. Adieu!

Elv. Adieu! [*Exeunt* BEATRICE *and* ELVIRA.

Vic. The devil that seiz'd the swine sure has seiz'd you,
And all your pinches make me tenfold writhe
Because you never gave the king his tithe. [*Exit.*

SCENE VI. DONNA BLANCA'S *Apartment: it is dark.— Enter the* KING *disguised, and* BLANCA *following him.*

Blan. Who is this man,
That in the gathering dusk enters our house,
Unaskt and muffled thus? what is 't you want?
To croak new evil in my ears? for none
But ravens now come near us — Such a silence
Is not the less ill-omen'd. Beatrice!
A light! my blood runs cold — Answer me, man,
What want you with me?

King. Let us be alone,
And I will tell you.

Digitized by Google

Blan. Leave us, Beatrice —
I 'll dare the worst — And now reveal yourself.
King. Not till the door be lockt.
Blan. Help, help!
King. Be still.
Blan. What would you? and who are you then?
King (discovering himself). The king.
Blan. The king!
King. Do you not know me?
Blan. Yea, my liege,
Now the black cloud has fallen from the sun.
But cannot guess why, at an hour like this,
And thus disguis'd — Oh, let me know at once
Whether in mercy or new wrath you come
To this most wretched house!
King. In neither, Blanca;
But in the execution of the trust
That Heav'n has given to kings.
Blan. And how, my liege,
Fall I beneath your royal vigilance? [breath,
King. You soon shall hear: but, Blanca, first take
And still your heart to its accustom'd tune,
For I must have you all yourself to answer
What I must ask of you. Listen to me.
Your son, in the full eye of God and man,
Has struck his father — who as publicly
Has cried to me for vengeance — such a feud

Digitized by Google

Coming at length to such unnatural close,
Men 'gin to turn suspicious eyes on you,—
You, Blanca, so mixt up in such a cause
As in the annals of all human crime
Is not recorded. Men begin to ask
Can these indeed be truly son and sire?
This is the question; and to sift it home,
I am myself come hither to sift you
By my own mouth. Open your heart to me,
Relying on the honour of a king
That nothing you reveal to me to-night
Shall ever turn against your good repute.
We are alone, none to way-lay the words
That travel from your lips; speak out at once;
Or, by the heavens, Blanca,—

Blan. Oh, my liege,
Not in one breath
Turn royal mercy into needless threat;
Though it be true my bosom has so long
This secret kept close prisoner, and hop'd
To have it buried with me in my grave,
Yet if I peril my own name and theirs
By such a silence, I 'll not leave to rumour
Another hour's suspicion; but reveal
To you, my liege, yea, and to heav'n and earth,
My most disastrous story.

King. I attend.

Digitized by Google

Blan. My father, though of lineage high and clear
As the sun's self, was poor; and knowing well
How ill in this world honour fares alone,
Betroth'd the beauty of my earliest years
(The only dowry that I brought with me)
To Lope de Urrea, whose estate
Was to supply the much he miss'd of youth.
We married — like December wed to May,
Or flower of earliest summer set in snow;
Yet heaven witness that I honour'd, ay,
And lov'd him; though with little cause of love,
And ever cold returns; but I went on
Doing my duty toward him, hoping still
To have a son to fill the gaping void
That lay between us — yea, I pray'd for one
So earnestly, that God, who has ordain'd
That we should ask at once for all and nothing
Of Him who best knows what is best for us,
Denied me what I wrongly coveted.
Well, let me turn the leaf on which are written
The troubles of those ill-assorted years,
And to my tale. I had a younger sister,
Whom to console me in my wretched home,
I took to live with me — of whose fair youth
A gentleman enamour'd — Oh, my liege,
Ask not his name — yet why should I conceal it,
Whose honour may not leave a single chink

Digitized by Google

For doubt to nestle in? Sir, 't was Don Mendo,
Your minister; who, when his idle suit
Prosper'd not in my sister's ear, found means,
Feeing one of the household to his purpose,
To get admittance to her room by night;
Where, swearing marriage soon should sanction love,
He went away the victor of an honour
That like a villain he had come to steal;
Then, but a few weeks after, (so men quit
All obligation save of their desire,)
Married another, and growing great at court,
Went on your father's bidding into France
Ambassador, and from that hour to this
Knows not the tragic issue of his crime.
I, who perceiv'd my sister's alter'd looks,
And how in mind and body she far'd ill,
With menace and persuasion wrung from her
The secret I have told you, and of which
She bore within her bosom such a witness
As doubly prey'd upon her life. Enough;
She was my sister; why reproach her then,
And to no purpose now the deed was done?
Only I wonder'd at mysterious Heav'n,
Which her misfortune made to double mine,
Who had been pining for the very boon
That was her shame and sorrow; till at last,
Out of the tangle of this double grief

Digitized by Google

I drew a thread to extricate us both,
By giving forth myself about to bear
The child whose birth my sister should conceal.
'T was done — the day came on — I feign'd the pain
She felt, and on my bosom as my own
Cherish'd the crying infant she had borne,
And died in bearing — for even so it was;
I and another matron (who alone
Was partner in the plot)
Assigning other illness for her death.
This is my story, sir — this is the crime,
Of which the guilt being wholly mine, be mine
The punishment; I pleading on my knees
My love both to my husband and my sister
As some excuse. Pedro of Aragon,
Whom people call the Just, be just to me:
I do not ask for mercy, but for justice,
And that, whatever be my punishment,
It may be told of me, and put on record,
That, howsoever and with what design
I might deceive my husband and the world,
At least I have not sham'd my birth and honour.

King (apart). Thus much at least is well; this free confession
Of this unnatural feud the blackest part
Washes away, although it swell the list
Of knotted doubts that Justice must resolve;

Digitized by Google

As thus: — Don Lope has revil'd and struck
One whom himself and all the world believe
His father — a belief that I am pledg'd
Not to disprove. Don Mendo has traduc'd
A noble lady to her death; and Blanca
Contriv'd an ill imposture on her lord:
Two secret and one public misdemeanor,
To which I must adjudge due punishment.
Blanca, enough at present, you have done
Your duty; Fare you well.

Blan. Heav'n keep your Highness!

Don Mendo (knocking within). Open the door.

King. Who calls?

Blan. I know not, sir.

King. Open it, then, but on your life [*the door.*)
Reveal not I am here. (KING *hides*, BLANCA *opens*

Blan. Who is 't?

Enter MENDO.

Men. I, Blanca.

Blan. Your errand?

Men. Only, Blanca, to beseech you
Fear not, whatever you may hear or see
Against your son. His cause is in my hands,
His person in my keeping; being so,
Who shall arraign my dealings with him?

King (coming forth). I.

Digitized by Google

Men. My liege, if you —
King. Enough; give me the key
Of Lope's prison.
Men. This it is, my liege,
Only —
King. I know enough. Blanca, retire.
Mendo, abide you here. To-night shall show
If I be worthy of my name or no. [*Exit.*
Men. What is the matter, Blanca?
Blan. Your misdeeds
And mine, Don Mendo, which just Heaven now
Revenges with one blow on both of us.
After the King! nor leave him till he swear
To spare my Lope, who, I swear to you,
Is not my son, but yours, and my poor Laura's!
Men. Merciful Heav'ns! But I will save his life
Come what come may to me.
Blan. Away, away, then!
[*Exeunt severally.*

SCENE VII. *Same as* SCENE III.—*Enter* VIOLANTE *and* ELVIRA *at a side door.*

Elv. Consider, madam.
Viol. No!
Elv. But think —
Viol. I tell you it must be done.
Elv. They will accuse your father.

Digitized by Google

Viol. Let them; I tell you it must be done, and *now:* I ask'd you not for advice, but to obey me. Unlock the door.

Elv. Oh how I tremble! Hark!

Viol. A moment! They must not find him passing out — the attempt and not the deed confounding us.[1] Listen!

Elv. (listening at a side door). I can hear nothing distinct, only a confused murmur of voices. [ing!

Viol. Let me — hush! — Hark! they are approach-

Enter MENDO.

Men. Anguish, oh! anguish!

Viol. My father!

Men. Ay, indeed,
And a most wretched one.

Viol. What is it, sir?
Tell me at once.

Men. I know not. Oh, 't is false!
I know too well, and you must know it too.
My daughter, the poor prisoner who lies there
Is my own son, not Blanca's, not Urrea's,
But my own son, your brother, Violante!

Viol. My brother!

[1] Y se queda su intencion
Sin su efecto discubierta.

Digitized by Google

Men. Ay, your brother, my own son,
Whom we must save!
Viol. Alas, sir, I was here
On the same errand, ere I knew — but hark!
All 's quiet now. *(A groan within.)*
Men. Listen! What groan was that?
Viol. My hand shakes so, I cannot —
Lope (within). Mercy, O God!
Men. The key, the key! — but hark! they call again
At either door; we must unlock.

(They unlock the side doors.—Enter through one BLANCA *and* BEATRICE, *through the other* URREA *and* VICENTE.)

Urr. Don Mendo,
The king desires me from your mouth to learn
His sentence on my son.
Blan. Oh, Violante!
Men. From me! from me! to whom the king as yet
Has not deliver'd it.—
But what is this? Oh, God!

(The centre door opens and DON LOPE *is discovered, garrotted, with a paper in his hand, and lights at each side.)*

Urr. A sight to turn
Rancour into remorse.

Digitized by Google

Men. In his cold hand
He holds a scroll, the sentence, it may be,
The king referr'd you to. Read it, Urrea;
I cannot. Oh, my son, the chastisement
I only merited has fall'n on both
And doubled the remorse that I alone
Must feel — and stifle!

Urr. (reading). "He that reviles and strikes whom he believes
His father, let him die for 't; and let those
Who have disgrac'd a noble name, or join'd
An ill imposture, see his doom; and show
Three judgments summ'd up in a single blow."

Digitized by Google

THE MAYOR OF ZALAMEA.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING PHILIP II.

DON LOPE DE FIGUEROA.

DON ALVARO DE ATAIDE.

PEDRO CRESPO, *a Farmer of Zalamea.*

JUAN, *his Son.*

ISABEL, *his Daughter.*

INES, *his Niece.*

DON MENDO, *a poor Hidalgo.*

NUÑO, *his Servant.*

REBOLLEDO, *a Soldier.*

CHISPA, *his Mistress.*

A SERGEANT, A NOTARY, SOLDIERS, LABOURERS, CONSTABLES, ROYAL SUITE, &C.

Digitized by Google

THE MAYOR OF ZALAMEA.

(El Alcalde de Zalamea.)

ACT I.

SCENE I. *Country near Zalamea.—Enter* REBOLLEDO, CHISPA, *and Soldiers.*

Reb. CONFOUND, say I, these forced marches from place to place, without halt or bait; what say you, friends?

All. Amen!

Reb. To be trailed over the country like a pack of gypsies, after a little scrap of flag upon a pole, eh?

1st Soldier. Rebolledo 's off!

Reb. And that infernal drum which has at last been good enough to stop a moment stunning us.

2nd Sold. Come, come, Rebolledo, don't storm: we shall soon be at Zalamea.

Reb. And where will be the good of that if I 'm dead before I get there? And if not, 't will only be from bad to worse: for if we all reach the place alive, as

Digitized by Google

sure as death up comes Mr. Mayor to persuade the Commissary we had better march on to the next town. At first Mr. Commissary replies very virtuously, "Impossible! the men are fagged to death." But after a little pocket persuasion, then it 's all "Gentlemen, I 'm very sorry; but orders have come for us to march forward, and immediately"—and away we have to trot, foot weary, dust bedraggled, and starved as we are. Well, I swear if I do get alive to Zalamea to-day, I 'll not leave it on this side o' sun-rise for love, lash, or money. It won't be the first time in my life I 've given 'em the slip.

1st Sold. Nor the first time a poor fellow has had the slip given him for doing so. And more likely than ever now that Don Lope de Figueroa has taken the command, a fine brave fellow they say, but a devil of a Tartar, who 'll have every inch of duty done, or take the change out of his own son, without waiting for trial either.[1]

Reb. Listen to this now, gentlemen! By Heaven, I 'll be beforehand with him.

2nd Sold. Come, come, a soldier should n't talk so.

[1] Don Lope de Figueroa, who figures also in the *Amar despues de la Muerte*, was (says Mr. Ticknor) "the commander under whom Cervantes served in Italy, and probably in Portugal, when he was in the *Tercio de Flandes*, the Flanders Regiment, one of the best bodies of troops in the armies of Philip II.," and the very one now advancing, with perhaps Cervantes in it, to Zalamea.

Digitized by Google

Reb. I tell you it is n't for myself I care so much, as for this poor little thing that follows me.

Chis. Signor Rebolledo, don't you fret about me; you know I was born with a beard on my heart, if not on my chin, if ever girl was; and your fearing for me is as bad as if I was afeard myself. Why, when I came along with you I made up my mind to hardship and danger for honour's sake; else if I 'd wanted to live in clover, I never should have left the Alderman who kept such a table as all Aldermen don't, I promise you. Well, what 's the odds? I chose to leave him and follow the drum, and here I am, and if I don't flinch, why should you? [kind!

Reb. 'Fore Heaven, you 're the crown of woman-

Soldiers. So she is, so she is, Viva la Chispa!

Reb. And so she is, and one cheer more for her, hurrah! especially if she 'll give us a song to lighten the way.

Chis. The castanet shall answer for me.

Reb. I 'll join in — and do you, comrades, bear a hand in the chorus.

Soldiers. Fire away!

Chispa sings.

I.

Titiri tiri, marching is weary,
Weary, weary, and long is the way:
Titiri tiri, hither, my deary,
What meat have you got for the soldier to-day?

Digitized by Google

"Meat have I none, my merry men,"
Titiri tiri, then kill the old hen.
"Alas and a day! the old hen is dead!"
Then give us a cake from the oven instead.
Titiri titiri titiri tiri,
Give us a cake from the oven instead.

II.

Admiral, admiral, where have you been-a?
"I 've been fighting where the waves roar."
Ensign, ensign, what have you seen-a?
"Glory and honour and gunshot galore;
Fighting the Moors in column and line,
Poor fellows, they never hurt me or mine —
Titiri titiri titiri tina"—

1st Sold. Look, look, comrades — what between singing and grumbling we never noticed yonder church among the trees.

Reb. Is that Zalamea?

Chis. Yes, that it is, I know the steeple. Hurrah! we 'll finish the song when we get into quarters, or have another as good; for you know I have 'em of all sorts and sizes.

Reb. Halt a moment, here 's the sergeant.

2nd Sold. And the captain too.

Enter Captain and Sergeant.

Capt. Good news, gentlemen, no more marching for to-day at least; we halt at Zalamea till Don Lope joins with the rest of the regiment from Llerena. So who knows but you may have a several days' rest here?

Digitized by Google

Reb. and Solds. Huzzah for our captain!

Capt. Your quarters are ready, and the Commissary will give every one his billet on marching in.

Chis. (singing). Now then for

> Titiri tiri, hither, my deary,
> Heat the oven and kill the old hen.

[*Exit with Soldiers.*

Capt. Well, Mr. Sergeant, have you my billet?

Serg. Yes, sir.

Capt. And where am I to put up?

Serg. With the richest man in Zalamea, a farmer, as proud as Lucifer's heir-apparent.

Capt. Ah, the old story of an upstart.

Serg. However, sir, you have the best quarters in the place, including his daughter, who is, they say, the prettiest woman in Zalamea.

Capt. Pooh! a pretty peasant! splay hands and feet.

Serg. Shame! shame!

Capt. Is n't it true, puppy?

Serg. What would a man on march have better than a pretty country lass to toy with!

Capt. Well, I never saw one I cared for, even on march. I can't call a woman a woman unless she 's clean about the hands and fetlocks, and otherwise well appointed — a lady in short.

Digitized by Google

Serg. Well, any one for me who 'll let me kiss her. Come, sir, let us be going, for if you won't be at her, I will.

Capt. Look, look, yonder!

Serg. Why, it must be Don Quixote himself with his very Rosinante too, that Miguel Cervantes writes of.

Capt. And his Sancho at his side. Well, carry you my kit on before to quarters, and then come and tell me when all 's ready. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Zalamea, before* CRESPO'S *House.—Enter* DON MENDO *and* NUÑO.

Men. How 's the gray horse?

Nun. You may as well call him the *Dun;* so screw'd he can't move a leg.

Men. Did you have him walk'd gently about?

Nun. Walk'd about! when it 's corn he wants, poor [devil!

Men. And the dogs?

Nun. Ah, now, they might do if you 'd give them the horse to eat.

Men. Enough, enough — it has struck three. My gloves and tooth-pick!

Nun. That sinecure tooth-pick!

Men. I tell you I would brain any body who insinuated to me I had not dined — and on game too. But tell me, Nuño, hav'n't the soldiers come into Zalamea this afternoon?

Digitized by Google

Nun. Yes, sir.

Men. What a nuisance for the commonalty who have to quarter them.

Nun. But worse for those who hav'n't.

Men. What do you mean, sir?

Nun. I mean the squires. Ah, sir; if the soldiers are n't billeted on them, do you know why?

Men. Well, why?

Nun. For fear of being starved — which would be a bad job for the king's service.

Men. God rest my father's soul, say I, who left me a pedigree and patent all blazon'd in gold and azure, that exempts me from such impositions.

Nun. I wish he 'd left you the gold in a more available shape, however.

Men. Though indeed when I come to think of it, I don't know if I owe him any thanks; considering that unless he had consented to beget me an Hidalgo at once, I would n't have been born at all, for him or any one.

Nun. Humph! Could you have help'd it?

Men. Easily.

Nun. How, sir?

Men. You must know that every one that is born is the essence of the food his parents eat —

Nun. Oh! Your parents did eat then, sir? You have not inherited *that* of them, at all events.

Digitized by Google

Men. Which forthwith converts itself into proper flesh and blood — ergo, if my father had been an eater of onions, for instance, he would have begotten me with a strong breath; on which I should have said to him, "Hold, I must come of no such nastiness as that, I promise you."

Nun. Ah now I see the old saying is true.

Men. What is that?

Nun. That hunger sharpens wit.

Men. Knave, do you insinuate —

Nun. I only know it is now three o'clock, and we have neither of us yet had any thing but our own spittle to chew.

Men. Perhaps so, but there are distinctions of rank. An Hidalgo, sir, has no belly.

Nun. Oh Lord! that I were an Hidalgo!

Men. Possibly; servants must learn moderation in all things. But let me hear no more of the matter; we are under Isabel's window.

Nun. There again — If you are so devoted an admirer, why on earth, sir, don't you ask her in marriage of her father; by doing which you would kill two birds with one stone: get yourself something to eat, and his grandchildren squires.

Men. Hold your tongue, sir, it is impious. Am I, an Hidalgo with such a pedigree, to demean myself with a plebeian connexion just for money's sake?

Digitized by Google

Nun. Well, I 've always heard say a mean father-in-law is best; better stumble on a pebble than run your head again' a post. But, however, if you don't mean marriage, sir, what do you mean?

Men. And pray, sir, can't I dispose of her in a convent in case I get tired of her? But go directly, and tell me if you can get a sight of her?

Nun. I 'm afraid lest her father should get a sight of me.

Men. And what if he do, being my man? Go and do as I bid you.

Nun. (after going to look). Come, sir, you owe one meal at least now — she 's at the window with her cousin.

Men. Go again, and tell her something about her window being another East, and she a second Sun dawning from it in the afternoon. (ISABEL *and* INES *come to the window.)*

Ines. For heaven's sake, cousin, let 's stand here and see the soldiers march in.

Isab. Not I, while that man is in the way, Ines; you know how I hate the sight of him.

Ines. With all his devotion to you!

Isab. I wish he would spare himself and me the trouble.

Ines. I think you are wrong to take it as an affront.

Isab. How would you have me take it?

Digitized by Google

Ines. Why, as a compliment.

Isab. What, when I hate the man?

Men. Ah! 'pon the honour of an Hidalgo, (which is a sacred oath,) I could have sworn that till this moment the sun had not risen. But why should I wonder? when indeed a second Aurora —

Isab. Signor Don Mendo, how often have I told you not to waste your time playing these fool's antics before my window day after day.

Men. If a pretty woman only knew, la! how anger improved its beauty! her complexion needs no other paint than indignation. Go on, go on, lovely one, grow angrier, and lovelier still.

Isab. You shan't have even that consolation; come, Ines. [*Exit.*

Ines. Beware of the portcullis, sir knight.

(Shuts down the blind in his face.)

Men. Ines, beauty must be ever victorious, whether advancing or in retreat.

Enter CRESPO.

Cres. That I can never go in or out of my house without that squireen haunting it!

Nun. Pedro Crespo, sir!

Men. Oh — ah — let us turn another way; 't is an ill-conditioned fellow.

Digitized by Google

As he turns, enter JUAN.

Juan. That I never can come home but this ghost of an Hidalgo is there to spoil my appetite.

Nun. His son, sir!

Men. He 's worse. *(Turning back.)* Oh, Pedro Crespo, good day, Crespo, good man, good day.

[*Exit with* NUÑO.

Cres. Good day indeed; I 'll make it bad day one of these days with you, if you don't take care. But how now, Juanito, my boy?

Juan. I was looking for you, sir, but could not find you; where have you been?

Cres. To the barn, where high and dry
The jolly sheaves of corn do lie,
Which the sun, arch-chemist old,
Turn'd from black earth into gold,
And the swinging flail one day
On the barn-floor shall assay,
Separating the pure ore
From the drossy chaff away.
This I 've been about — And now,
Juanito, what hast thou?

Juan. Alas, sir, I can't answer in so good rhyme or reason. I have been playing at fives, and lost every bout.

Cres. What signifies if you paid? [the money.

Juan. But I could not, and have come to you for

Digitized by Google

Cres. Before I give it you, listen to me.
There are things two
Thou never must do:
Swear to more than thou knowest,
Play for more than thou owest;
And never mind cost,
So credit 's not lost.

Juan. Good advice, sir, no doubt, that I shall lay by for its own sake as well as for yours. Meanwhile, I have also heard say,

Preach not to a beggar till
The beggar's empty hide you fill.

Cres. 'Fore Heaven, thou pay'st me in my own coin. But —

Enter Sergeant.

Serg. Pray, does one Pedro Crespo live hereabout?

Cres. Have you any commands for him, if he does?

Serg. Yes, to tell him of the arrival of Don Alvaro de Ataide, captain of the troop that has just marcht into Zalamea, and quartered upon him.

Cres. Say no more; my house and all I have is ever at the service of the king, and of all who have authority under him. If you will leave his things here, I will see his room is got ready directly; and do you tell his Honour that, come when he will, he shall find me and mine at his service.

Digitized by Google

Serg. Good — he will be here directly. [*Exit.*

Juan. I wonder, father, that, rich as you are, you still submit yourself to these nuisances.

Cres. Why, boy, how could I help them?

Juan. You know; by buying a patent of Gentility.

Cres. A patent of Gentility! upon thy life now dost think there 's a soul who does n't know that I 'm no gentleman at all, but just a plain farmer? What 's the use of my buying a patent of Gentility, if I can't buy the gentle blood along with it! will any one think me a bit more of a gentleman for buying fifty patents? Not a whit; I should only prove I was worth so many thousand royals, not that I had gentle blood in my veins, which can't be bought at any price. If a fellow 's been bald ever so long, and buys him a fine wig, and claps it on, will his neighbours think it is his own hair a bit the more? No, they will say, "So-and-so has a fine wig; and, what 's more, he must have paid handsomely for it too." But they know his bald pate is safe under it all the while. That 's all he gets by it.

Juan. Nay, sir, he gets to look younger and handsomer, and keeps off sun and cold.

Cres. Tut! I 'll have none of your wig honour at any price. My grandfather was a farmer, so was my father, so is yours, and so shall you be after him. Go, call your sister.

Digitized by Google

Enter ISABEL *and* INES.

Oh here she is. Daughter, our gracious king (whose life God save these thousand years!) is on his way to be crowned at Lisbon; thither the troops are marching from all quarters, and among others that fine veteran Flanders regiment, commanded by the famous Don Lope de Figueroa, will march into Zalamea, and be quartered here to-day; some of the soldiers in my house. Is it not as well you should be out of the way?

Isab. Sir, 't was upon this very errand I came to you, knowing what nonsense I shall have to hear if I stay below. My cousin and I can go up to the garret, and there keep so close, the very sun shall not know of our whereabout.

Cres. That 's my good girl. Juanito, you wait here to receive them in case they come while I am out looking after their entertainment.

Isab. Come, Ines.

Ines. Very well —

Though I 've heard in a song what folly 't would be
To try keep in a loft what won't keep on the tree.

[*Exeunt.*

Enter Captain and Sergeant.

Serg. This is the house, sir.

Capt. Is my kit come?

Serg. Yes, sir, and *(aside)* I 'll be the first to take an inventory of the pretty daughter. [*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

Juan. Welcome, sir, to our house; we count it a great honour to have such a cavalier as yourself for a guest, I assure you. *(Aside.)* What a fine fellow! what an air! I long to try the uniform, somehow.

Capt. Thank you, my lad.

Juan. You must forgive our poor house, which we devoutly wish was a palace for your sake. My father is gone after your supper, sir; may I go and see that your chamber is got ready for you?

Capt. Thank you, thank you.

Juan. Your servant, sir. [*Exit.*

Enter Sergeant.

Capt. Well, sergeant, where 's the Dulcinea you [told me of?

Serg. Deuce take me, sir, if I hav'n't been looking every where in parlour, bed-room, kitchen, and scullery, up-stairs and down-stairs, and can't find her out.

Capt. Oh, no doubt the old fellow has hid her away for fear of us.

Serg. Yes, I ask'd a serving wench, and she confess'd her master had lock'd the girl up in the attic, with strict orders not even to look out so long as we were in the place.

Capt. Ah! these clodpoles are all so jealous of the service. And what is the upshot? Why, I, who did n't care a pin to see her before, shall never rest till I get at her now.

Digitized by Google

Serg. But how, without a blow-up?

Capt. Let me see; how shall we manage it?

Serg. The more difficult the enterprise, the more glory in success, you know, in love as in war.

Capt. I have it!

Serg. Well, sir?

Capt. You shall pretend — but no, here comes one will serve my turn better.

Enter REBOLLEDO *and* CHISPA.

Reb. (to CHISPA). There he is; now if I can get him into a good humour.

Chis. Speak up then, like a man.

Reb. I wish I 'd some of your courage; but don't you leave me while I tackle him. Please your Honour —

Capt. (to Sergeant.) I tell you I 've my eye on Rebolledo to do him a good turn; I like his spirit.

Serg. Ah, he 's one of a thousand.

Reb. (aside). Here 's luck! Please your Honour —

Capt. Oh, Rebolledo — Well, Rebolledo, what is it?

Reb. You may know I am a gentleman who has, by ill luck, lost all his estate; all that ever I had, have, shall have, may have, or can have, through all the conjugations of the verb "*to have.*" And I want your Honour —

Capt. Well?

Digitized by Google

Reb. To desire the ensign to appoint me roulette-master to the regiment, so I may pay my liabilities like a man of honour.

Capt. Quite right, quite right; I will see it done.

Chis. Oh, brave captain! Oh, if I only live to hear them all call me Madam Roulette!

Reb. Shall I go at once and tell him?

Capt. Wait. I want you first to help me in a little plan I have.

Reb. Out with it, noble captain. Slow said slow sped, you know.

Capt. You are a good fellow; listen. I want to get into that attic there, for a particular purpose.

Reb. And why does n't your Honour go up at once?

Capt. I don't like to do it in a strange house without an excuse. Now look here; you and I will pretend to quarrel; I get angry and draw my sword, and you run away up-stairs, and I after you, to the attic, that 's all; I 'll manage the rest.

Chis. Ah, we get on famously.

Reb. I understand. When are we to begin?

Capt. Now directly.

Reb. Very good. *(In a loud voice.)* This is the reward of my services — a rascal, a pitiful scoundrel, is preferred, when a man of honour — a man who has seen service —

Chis. Halloa! Rebolledo up! All is not so well.

Digitized by Google

Reb. Who has led you to victory —

Capt. This language to me, sir? [defrauded —

Reb. Yes, to you, who have so grossly insulted and

Capt. Silence! and think yourself lucky if I take no further notice of your insolence.

Reb. If I restrain myself, it is only because you are my captain, and as such — but, 'fore God, if my cane were in my hand —

Chis. (advancing). Hold! Hold!

Capt. I 'll show you, sir, how to talk to me in this way. *(Draws his sword.)*

Reb. It is before your commission, not you, I retreat.

Capt. That shan't save you, rascal!

(Pursues REBOLLEDO *out.)*

Chis. Oh, I shan't be Madam Roulette after all. Murder! murder! [*Exit calling.*

SCENE III. ISABEL'S *Garret.*— ISABEL *and* INES.

Isab. What noise is that on the stairs?

Enter REBOLLEDO.

Reb. Sanctuary! Sanctuary!

Isab. Who are you, sir?

Enter CAPTAIN.

Capt. Where is the rascal?

Isab. A moment, sir! This poor man has flown to

Digitized by Google

our feet for protection; I appeal to you for it; and no man, and least of all an officer, will refuse that to any woman.

Capt. I swear no other arm than that of beauty, and beauty such as yours, could have withheld me. *(To* REBOLLEDO.) You may thank the deity that has saved you, rascal.

Isab. And I thank you, sir.

Capt. And yet ungratefully slay me with your eyes in return for sparing him with my sword.

Isab. Oh, sir, do not mar the grace of a good deed by poor compliment, and so make me less mindful of the real thanks I owe you.

Capt. Wit and modesty kiss each other, as well they may, in that lovely face. *(Kneels.)*

Isab. Heavens! my father!

Enter CRESPO *and* JUAN *with swords.*

Cres. How is this, sir? I am alarmed by cries of murder in my house — am told you have pursued a poor man up to my daughter's room; and, when I get here expecting to find you killing a man, I find you courting a woman.

Capt. We are all born subjects to some dominion — soldiers especially to beauty. My sword, though justly rais'd against this man, as justly fell at this lady's bidding.

Digitized by Google

Cres. No lady, sir, if you please; but a plain peasant girl — my daughter.

Juan (aside). All a trick to get at her. My blood boils. *(Aloud to Captain.)* I think, sir, you might have seen enough of my father's desire to serve you to prevent your requiting him by such an affront as this.

Cres. And, pray, who bid thee meddle, boy? Affront! what affront? The soldier affronted his captain; and if the captain has spared him for thy sister's sake, pray what hast thou to say against it?

Capt. I think, young man, you had best consider before you impute ill intention to an officer.

Juan. I know what I know.

Cres. What! you will go on, will you?

Capt. It is out of regard for you I do not chastise him.

Cres. Wait á bit; if that were wanting, 't would be from his father, not from you.

Juan. And, what 's more, I would n't endure it from any one but my father.

Capt. You would not?

Juan. No! death rather than such dishonour!

Capt. What, pray, is a clodpole's idea of honour?

Juan. The same as a captain's — no clodpole no I can tell you. [captain,

Capt. 'Fore Heaven, I must punish this insolence.

(About to strike him.)

Digitized by Google

Cres. You must do it through me, then.

Reb. Eyes right! — Don Lope!

Capt. Don Lope!

Enter DON LOPE.

Lope. How now? A riot the very first thing I find on joining the regiment? What is it all about?

Capt. (aside). Awkward enough!

Cres. (aside). By the lord, the boy would have held his own with the best of 'em.

Lope. Well! No one answer me? 'Fore God, I 'll pitch the whole house, men, women, and children, out of windows, if you don't tell me at once. Here have I had to trail up your accursed stairs, and then no one will tell me what for.

Cres. Nothing, nothing at all, sir.

Lope. Nothing? that would be the worst excuse of all, but swords are n't drawn for nothing; come, the truth?

Capt. Well, the simple fact is this, Don Lope: I am quartered upon this house; and one of my soldiers —

Lope. Well, sir, go on.

Capt. Insulted me so grossly I was obliged to draw my sword on him. He ran up here where it seems these two girls live; and I, not knowing there was any harm, after him; at which these men, their father

Digitized by Google

or brother, or some such thing, take affront. This is the whole business.

Lope. I am just come in time then to settle it. First, who is the soldier that began it with an act of insubordination?

Reb. What, am I to pay the piper?

Isab. (pointing to REB.) This, sir, was the man who ran up first.

Lope. This? handcuff him!

Reb. Me! my lord?

Capt. (aside to REB.) Don't blab, I 'll bear you harmless.

Reb. Oh, I dare say, after being marcht off with my hands behind me like a coward. Noble commander, 't was the captain's own doing; he made me pretend a quarrel, that he might get up here to see the women.

Capt. I *had* some cause for quarrel, you see.

Lope. Not enough to peril the peace of the town for. Halloa there! beat all to quarters on pain of death. And, to prevent further ill blood here, do you *(to the Captain)* quarter yourself elsewhere till we march. I 'll stop here.

Capt. I shall of course obey you, sir.

Cres. (to ISABEL). Get you in. *(Exeunt* ISAB. *and* INES.) I really ought to thank you heartily for coming just as you did, sir; else, I 'd done for myself.

Digitized by Google

Lope. How so?

Cres. I should have killed this popinjay.

Lope. What, sir, a captain in his Majesty's service?

Cres. Ay, a general, if he insulted me.

Lope. I tell you, whoever lays his little finger on the humblest private in the regiment, I 'll hang him.

Cres. And I tell you, whoever points his little finger at my honour, I 'll cut him down before hanging.

Lope. Know you not, you are bound by your allegiance to submit?

Cres. To all cost of property, yes; but of honour, no, no, no! My goods and chattels, ay, and my life — are the king's; but my honour is my own soul's, and that is — God Almighty's!

Lope. 'Fore God, there 's some truth in what you say.

Cres. 'Fore God, there ought to be, for I 've been some years saying it.

Lope. Well, well. I 've come a long way, and this leg of mine (which I wish the devil who gave it would carry away with him!) cries for rest.

Cres. And who prevents its taking some? the same devil I suppose who gave you your leg, gave me a bed (which I don't want him to take away again, however) on which your leg may lie if it like.

Lope. But did the devil, when he was about it, make your bed as well as give it?

Digitized by Google

Cres. To be sure he did.

Lope Then I 'll unmake it — Heaven knows I 'm weary enough.

Cres. Heaven rest you then.

Lope (aside). Devil or saint alike he echoes me.

Cres. (aside). I and Don Lope never shall agree.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *In Zalamea.— Enter* DON MENDO *and* NUÑO.

Men. WHO told you all this?

Nun. Ginesa, her wench.

Men. That, whether that riot in the house were by accident or design, the captain has ended by being really in love with Isabel?

Nun. So as he has as little of comfort in his quarters as we of eatable in ours — ever under her window, sending her messages and tokens by a nasty little soldier of his.

Men. Enough, enough of your poisoned news.

Nun. Especially on an empty stomach.

Men. Be serious, Nuño. And how does Isabel answer him?

Digitized by Google

Nun. As she does you. Bless you, she 's meat for your masters.

Men. Rascal! This to me! *(Strikes him.)*

Nun. There! two of my teeth you 've knockt out, I believe: to be sure they were n't of much use in your service.

Men. By Heaven, I 'll do so to that captain, if—

Nun. Take care, he 's coming, sir.

Men. (aside to NUÑO). This duel shall be *now*— though night be advancing on — before discretion come to counsel milder means. Come, and help me arm.

Nun. Lord bless me, sir, what arms have you got except the coat over the door?

Men. In my armoury I doubt not are some pieces of my ancestors that will fit their descendant.

[*Exeunt.*

Enter Captain, Sergeant, and REBOLLEDO.

Capt. I tell you my love is not a fancy; but a passion, a tempest, a volcano.

Serg. What a pity it is you ever set eyes on the girl!

Capt. What answer did the servant give you?

Serg. Nay, sir, I have told you.

Capt. That a country wench should stand upon her virtue as if she were a lady!

Digitized by Google

Serg. This sort of girls, captain, don't understand gentlemen's ways. If a strapping lout in their own line of life courted them in their own way, they 'd hear and answer quick enough. Besides, you really expect too much, that a decent woman should listen after one day's courtship to a lover who is perhaps to leave her to-morrow.

Capt. And to-day 's sun-setting!

Serg. Your own love too, but from one glance —

Capt. Is not one spark enough for gunpowder?

Serg. You too, who would have it no country girl could be worth a day's courtship!

Capt. Alas, 't was that was my ruin — running unawares upon a rock. I thought only to see a splay-footed gawky, and found a goddess. Ah, Rebolledo, could you but get me one more sight of her?

Reb. Well, captain, you have done me one good turn, and though you had like to run me into danger, I don't mind venturing again for you.

Capt. But how? how?

Reb. Well, now, look here. We 've a man in the regiment with a fair voice, and my little Chispa — no one like her for a flash song. Let 's serenade at the girl's window; she must, in courtesy or curiosity, look out; and then —

Capt. But Don Lope is there, and we must n't wake him.

Digitized by Google

Reb. Don Lope? When does he ever get asleep with that leg of his, poor fellow? Besides, you can mix along with us in disguise, so as at least *you* won't come into question.

Capt. Well, there is but this chance, if it be but a faint one; for if we should march to-morrow! — come, let us set about it; it being, as you say, between ourselves that I have any thing to do with it.

[*Exeunt Captain and Sergeant.*

Enter CHISPA.

Chis. He 's got it, at any rate.

Reb. What 's the matter now, Chispa?

Chis. Oh, I mark'd his face for him.

Reb. What, a row?

Chis. A fellow there who began to ask questions as to my fair play at roulette — when I was all as fair as day too — I answered him with this. *(Showing a knife.)* Well, he 's gone to the barber's to get it dressed.

Reb. You still stand kicking when I want to get to the fair. I wanted you with your castanets, not your knife.

Chis. Pooh! one 's as handy as the other. What 's up now?

Reb. Come with me to quarters; I 'll tell you as we go along. [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE II. *A trellis of Vines in* CRESPO'S *garden.—Enter* CRESPO *and* DON LOPE.

Cres. Lay the table here. *(To* LOPE.) You 'll relish your supper here in the cool, sir. These hot August days at least bring their cool nights by way of excuse.

Lope. A mighty pleasant parlour this!

Cres. Oh, a little strip my daughter amuses herself with; sit down, sir. In place of the fine voices and instruments you are us'd to, you must put up with only the breeze playing on the vine leaves in concert with the little fountain yonder. Even the birds (our only musicians) are gone to bed, and would n't sing any the more if I were to wake them. Come, sit down, sir, and try to ease that poor leg of yours.

Lope. I wish to heaven I could.

Cres. Amen!

Lope. Well, I can at least bear it. Sit down, Crespo.

Cres. Thank you, sir. *(Hesitating.)*

Lope. Sit down, sit down, pray.

Cres. Since you bid me then, you must excuse my ill manners. *(Sits.)*

Lope. Humph — Do you know, I am thinking, Crespo, that yesterday's riot rather overset your good [ones?

Cres. Ay?

Lope. Why how else is it that you, whom I can scarce get to sit down at all to-day, yesterday plump'd yourself down at once, and in the big chair too?

Digitized by Google

Cres. Simply because yesterday you *did n't* ask me. To-day you are courteous, and I am shy.

Lope. Yesterday you were all thistle and hedgehog; to-day as soft as silk.

Cres. It is only because you yourself were so. I always answer in the key I 'm spoken to; yesterday you were all out of tune, and so was I. It is my principle to swear with the swearer, and pray with the saint; all things to all men. So much so as I declare to you your bad leg kept me awake all night. And, by the by, I wish now we are about it, you would tell me which of your legs it is that ails you: for, not knowing, I was obliged to make sure by swearing at both of mine: and one at a time is quite enough.

Lope. Well, Pedro, you will perhaps think I have some reason for my tetchiness, when I tell you that for thirty years during which I have served in the Flemish wars through summer's sun, and winter's frost, and enemy's bullets, I have never known what it is to be an hour without pain.

Cres. God give you patience to bear it!

Lope. Pish! can't I give it myself?

Cres. Well, let him leave you alone then!

Lope. Devil take patience!

Cres. Ah, let him! he wants it; only it 's too good a job for him.

Digitized by Google

Enter JUAN *with Table, &c.*

Juan. Supper, sir.

Lope. But what are my people about, not to see to [all this?

Cres. Pardon my having been so bold to tell them I and my family would wait upon you, so, as I hope, you shall want for nothing.

Lope. On one condition then, that as you have no fear of your company now, your daughter may join us at supper.

Cres. Juan, bid your sister come directly.

[*Exit* JUAN.

Lope. My poor health may quiet all suspicion on that score, I think.

Cres. Sir, if you were as lusty as I wish you, I should have no fear. I bid my daughter keep above while the regiment was here because of the nonsense soldiers usually talk to girls. If all were gentlemen like you, I should be the first to make her wait on them.

Lope (aside). The cautious old fellow!

Enter JUAN, ISABEL, *and* INES.

Isab. (to CRESPO). Your pleasure, sir?

Cres. It is Don Lope's, who honours you by bidding you to sup with him.

Lope (aside). What a fair creature! Nay, 't is I that honour myself by the invitation.

Digitized by Google

Isab. Let me wait upon you.

Lope. Indeed no, unless waiting upon me mean supping with me.

Cres. Sit down, sit down, girl, as Don Lope desires you. [*They sit at table. Guitar heard within.*

Lope. Music too!

Cres. None of ours. It must be some of your soldiers, Don Lope.

Lope. Ah, Crespo, the troubles and dangers of war must have a little to sweeten them betimes. The uniform sits very tight, and must be let out every now and then.

Juan. Yet 't is a fine life, sir.

Lope. Do you think you would like to follow it?

Juan. If I might at your Excellency's side.

SONG *(within).*

Ah for the red spring rose,
  Down in the garden growing,
Fading as fast as it blows,
  Who shall arrest its going?
Peep from thy window and tell,
Fairest of flowers, Isabel.

Lope (aside). Pebbles thrown up at the window too! But I 'll say nothing, for all sakes. *(Aloud.)* What foolery!

Cres. Boys! Boys! *(Aside.)* To call her very name too! If it were n't for Don Lope —

Digitized by Google

Juan (going). I 'll teach them —

Cres. Halloa, lad, whither away?

Juan. To see for a dish —

Cres. They 'll see after that. Sit still where thou art.

SONG *(within).*

Wither it would, but the bee
Over the blossom hovers,
And the sweet life ere it flee
With as sweet art recovers,
Sweetest at night in his cell,
Fairest of flowers, Isabel.

Isab. (aside). How have I deserved this?

Lope (knocking over his chair). This is not to be borne!

Cres. (upsetting the table). No more it is!

Lope. I meant my leg.

Cres. And I mine.

Lope. I can eat no more, and will to bed.

Cres. Very good; so will I.

Lope. Good night, good night, to you all.

All. Good night, sir.

Lope (aside). I 'll see to them. [*Exit.*

Cres. (aside). I 'll shut the girls up, and then look after 'em. *(Aloud.)* Come, to bed. *(To* JUAN.) Halloa, lad, again! This is the way to thy room, is it not? [*Exeunt severally.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE III. *Outside* CRESPO'S *House.—The Captain, Sergeant,* REBOLLEDO, CHISPA, *&c., with guitars. —At one corner,* MENDO *in old armour, with* NUÑO, *observing them.—It is dark.*

Men. (aside to NUÑO). You see this?

Nun. And hear it.

Men. I am bloodily minded to charge into them at once, and disperse them into chaos; but I will see if she is guilty of answering them by a sign.

Capt. No glance from the window yet!

Reb. Who 'd stir for a sentimental love song? Come, Chispa, you can give us one that would make her look out of the grave.

Chis. Here am I on my pedestal. Now for it. *(She sings.)*

There once was a certain Sampayo
Of Andalusia the fair;
A major he was in the service,
And a very fine coat did he wear.
And one night, as to-night it might happen,
That as he was going his round,
With the Garlo half drunk in a tavern —

Reb. Asonante to "*happen*," you know.

Chis. Don't put me out, Rebolledo — *(Sings.)*

With the Garlo half drunk in a tavern
His lovely Chillona he found.

CHORUS.

With the Garlo half drunk in a tavern
His lovely Chillona he found.

Digitized by Google

SECOND STANZA.

Now this Garlo, as chronicles tell us,
Although rather giv'n to strong drinks,
Was one of those terrible fellows
Is down on a man ere he winks.
And so while the major all weeping
Upbraided his lady unkind,
The Garlo behind him came creeping
And laid on the major behind.

CHORUS.

The Garlo, &c.

(During Chorus, DON LOPE *and* CRESPO *have entered at different sides with swords, and begin to lay about them.)*

Cres. What something in this way, perhaps!
Lope. After this fashion, may be! } *Together.*

(The Soldiers are driven off.)

Lope. Well, we 're quit of them, except one. But I 'll soon settle him.

Cres. One still hanging about. Off with you!

Lope. Off with *you*, rascal! *(They fight.)* By Heaven, he fights well!

Cres. By Heaven, a handy chap at his tool!

Enter JUAN *with sword and torch.*

Juan. Where is Don Lope?

Lope. Crespo!

Digitized by Google

Cres. Don Lope! [to bed?

Lope. To be sure, did n't you say you were going

Cres. And did n't you?

Lope. This was my quarrel, not yours.

Cres. Very well, and I come out to help you in it.

Re-enter Captain and Soldiers with swords.

1st Sold. We 'll soon settle them.

Capt. Don Lope!

Lope. Yes, Don Lope. What is all this, sir?

Capt. The soldiers were singing and playing in the street, sir, doing no offence to any one, but were set upon by some of the town's people, and I came to stop the riot.

Lope. You have done well, Don Alvaro, I know your prudence; however, as there is a grudge on both sides, I shall not visit the town's people this time with further severity; but, for the sake of all parties, order the regiment to march from Zalamea to-morrow — nay, to-day, for it is now dawn. See to it, sir: and let me hear of no such disgraceful riots [hereafter.

Capt. I shall obey your orders, sir. [*Exit with Soldiers, &c.*

Cres. (aside). Don Lope is a fine fellow; we shall cog together after all.

Lope (to CRESPO *and* JUAN). You two keep with me, and don't be found alone. [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

Re-enter MENDO, *and* NUÑO *wounded.*

Men. 'T is only a scratch.

Nun. A scratch? Well, I could well have spared that.

Men. Ah, what is it compared to the wound in my heart!

Nun. I would gladly exchange for all that.

Men. Well, he did lay upon your head handsomely, did n't he?

Nun. Ah, and on my tail too; while you, under that great shield of yours,— *(Drum.)*

Men. Hark! what 's that?

Nun. The soldiers' reveillee. I heard say they were to leave Zalamea to-day.

Men. I am glad of it, since they 'll carry that detestable captain off with them at all events. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Outside Zalamea.—Enter Captain, Sergeant,* REBOLLEDO, *and* CHISPA.

Capt. March you on, Sergeant, with the troop. I shall lie here till sun-down, and then steal back to Zalamea for one last chance.

Serg. If you are resolved on this, sir, you had better do it well attended, for these bumpkins are dangerous, once affronted.

Reb. Where, however, (and you ought to tip me for my news,) you have one worst enemy the less.

Capt. Who 's that?

Digitized by Google

Reb. Isabel's brother. Don Lope and the lad took a fancy to each other and have persuaded the old father to let him go for a soldier; and I have only just met him as proud as a peacock, with all the sinew of the swain and the spirit of the soldier already about him.

Capt. All works well; there is now only the old father at home, who can easily be disposed of. It only needs that he who brought me this good news help me to use it. [of my power.

Reb. Me do you mean, sir? So I will, to the best

Capt. Good; you shall go with me.

Serg. But if Don Lope should happen on you?

Capt. He is himself obliged to set off to Guadalupe this evening, as the king is already on the road. This I heard from himself when I went to take his orders. Come with me, Sergeant, and settle about the troops marching, and then for my own campaign.

[*Exeunt Captain and Sergeant.*

Chis. And what am I to do, Rebolledo, meanwhile? I shan't be safe alone with that fellow whose face I sent to be stitcht by the barber.

Reb. Ah, how to manage about that? You would n't dare go with us?

Chis. Not in petticoats; but in the clothes of that runaway stable boy? I can step into them free of expense.

Digitized by Google

Reb. That 's a brave girl.

Chis. (singing).

And now who shall say
The love of a soldier's wife lasts but a day?

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. CRESPO'S *Garden Porch.*—DON LOPE, CRESPO, JUAN.

Lope. I have much to thank you for, Crespo, but for nothing so much as for giving me your son for a soldier. I do thank you for that with all my heart.

Cres. I am proud he should be your servant.

Lope. The king's! the king's!—*my* friend. I took a fancy to him from the first for his spirit and affection to the service.

Juan. And I will follow you to the world's end, sir.

Cres. Though you must make allowance for his awkwardness at first, sir, remembering he has only had ploughmen for teachers, and plough and pitch-forks for books.

Lope. He needs no apology. And now the sun's heat abates towards his setting, I will be off.

Juan. I will see for the litter. [*Exit.*

Enter ISABEL *and* INES.

Isab. You must not go, sir, without our adieu.

Lope. I would not have done so; nor without asking pardon for much that is past, and even for what I

Digitized by Google

am now about to do. But remember, fair Isabel, 't is not the price of the gift, but the good will of the giver, makes its value. This brooch, though of diamond, becomes poor in your hands, and yet I would fain have you wear it in memory of Don Lope.

Isab. I take it ill you should wish to repay us for an entertainment —

Lope. No, no, no repayment; that were impossible if I wished it. A free keepsake of regard.

Isab. As such I receive it then, sir. Ah, may I make bold to commit my brother to your kindness?

Lope. Indeed, indeed, you may rely on me.

Enter JUAN.

Juan. The litter is ready.

Lope. Adieu, then, all.

All. Adieu, adieu, sir.

Lope. Ha, Peter! who, judging from our first meeting, could have prophesied we should part such good friends?

Cres. I could, sir, had I but known —

Lope (going). Well?

Cres. That you were at once as good as crazy. (*Exit* LOPE.) And now, Juan, before going, let me give thee a word of advice in presence of thy sister and cousin; thou and thy horse will easily overtake Don Lope, advice and all. By God's grace, boy, thou

Digitized by Google

com'st of honourable if of humble stock; bear both in mind, so as neither to be daunted from trying to rise, nor puffed up so as to be sure to fall. How many have done away the memory of a defect by carrying themselves modestly; while others again have gotten a blemish only by being too proud of being born without one. There is a just humility that will maintain thine own dignity, and yet make thee insensible to many a rub that galls the proud spirit. Be courteous in thy manner, and liberal of thy purse; for 't is the hand to the bonnet and in the pocket that makes friends in this world; of which to gain one good, all the gold the sun breeds in India, or the universal sea sucks down, were a cheap purchase. Speak no evil of women; I tell thee the meanest of them deserves our respect; for of women do we not all come? Quarrel with no one but with good cause; by the Lord, over and over again, when I see masters and schools of arms among us, I say to myself, "This is not the thing we want at all, *How to fight*, but, *Why to fight?* that is the lesson we want to learn." And I verily believe if but one master of the *Why to fight* advertised among us he would carry off all the scholars. Well — enough — You have not (as you once said to me) my advice this time on an empty stomach — a fair outfit of clothes and money — a good horse — and a good sword — these, together with Don Lope's countenance, and my

Digitized by Google

blessing — I trust in God to live to see thee home again with honour and advancement on thy back. My son, God bless thee! There — And now go — for I am beginning to play the woman.

Juan. Your words will live in my heart, sir, so long as it lives. *(He kisses his father's hand.)* Sister! *(He embraces her.)*

Isab. Would I could hold you back in my arms!

Juan. Adieu, cousin!

Ines. I can't speak. [my word is given!

Cres. Be off, else I shall never let thee go — and

Juan. God bless you all! [*Exit.*

Isab. Oh, you never should have let him go, sir.

Cres. (aside). I shall do better now. *(Aloud.)* Pooh, why, what the deuce could I have done with him at home here all his life — a lout — a scape-grace perhaps. Let him go serve his king.

Isab. Leaving us by night too!

Cres. Better than by day, child, at this season — Pooh! — *(Aside.)* I must hold up before them.

Isab. Come, sir, let us in.

Ines. No, no, cousin, e'en let us have a little fresh air now the soldiers are gone.

Cres. True — and here I may watch my Juan along the white, white road. Let us sit. *(They sit.)*

Isab. Is not this the day, sir, when the Town Council elects its officers?

Digitized by Google

Cres. Ay, indeed, in August — so it is. And indeed this very day.

(As they talk together, the Captain, Sergeant, REBOLLEDO *and* CHISPA *steal in.)*

Capt. (whispering). 'T is she! you know our plan; I seize her, and you look to the others.

Isab. What noise is that?

Ines. Who are these?

(The Captain seizes and carries off ISABEL — *the Sergeant and* REBOLLEDO *seize* CRESPO.)

Isab. (within). My father! My father!

Cres. Villains! A sword! A sword!

Reb. Kill him at once.

Serg. No, no.

Reb. We must carry him off with us then, or his cries will rouse the town. [*Exeunt, carrying* CRESPO.

ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Wood near Zalamea.—It is dark.—Enter* ISABEL.

Isab. OH never, never might the light of day arise and show me to myself in my shame! Oh, fleeting morning star, mightest thou never yield to the dawn

Digitized by Google

that even now presses on your azure skirts! And thou, great Orb of all, do thou stay down in the cold ocean foam; let night for once advance her trembling empire into thine! For once assert thy voluntary power to hear and pity human misery and prayer, nor hasten up to proclaim the vilest deed that Heaven, in revenge on man, has written on his guilty annals! Alas! even as I speak, thou liftest thy bright, inexorable face above the hills! Oh! horror! What shall I do? whither turn my tottering feet? Back to my own home? and to my aged father, whose only joy it was to see his own spotless honour spotlessly reflected in mine, which now—And yet if I return not, I leave calumny to make my innocence accomplice in my own shame! Oh that I had stayed to be slain by Juan over my slaughter'd honour! But I dared not meet his eyes even to die by his hand. Alas!—Hark! What is that noise?

Cres. (within). Oh in pity slay me at once!

Isab. One calling for death like myself?

Cres. Whoever thou art—

Isab. That voice! [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *Another place in the Wood.*—CRESPO *tied to a tree.*—*Enter to him* ISABEL.

Isab. My father!

Cres. Isabel! Unbind these cords, my child.

Digitized by Google

Isab. I dare not — I dare not yet, lest you kill before you hear my story — and you must hear that.

Cres. No more, no more! Misery needs no remem-

Isab. It must be. [brancer.

Cres. Alas! Alas!

Isab. Listen for the last time. You know how, sitting last night under the shelter of those white hairs in which my maiden youth had grown, those wretches, whose only law is force, stole upon us. He who had feign'd that quarrel in our house, seizing and tearing me from your bosom as a lamb from the fold, carried me off; my own cries stifled, yours dying away behind me, and yet ringing in my ears like the sound of a trumpet that has ceas'd! — till here, where out of reach of pursuit,— all dark — the very moon lost from heaven — the wretch began with passionate lies to excuse his violence by his love — his love! — I implored, wept, threatened, all in vain — the villain — But my tongue will not utter what I must weep in silence and ashes for ever! Yet let these quivering hands and heaving bosom, yea, the very tongue that cannot speak, speak loudliest! Amid my shrieks, entreaties, imprecations, the night began to wear away and dawn to creep into the forest. I heard a rustling in the leaves; it was my brother — who in the twilight understood all without a word — drew the sword you had but just given him — they fought —

Digitized by Google

and I, blind with terror, shame, and anguish, fled till— till at last I fell before your feet, my father, to tell you my story before I die! And now I undo the cords that keep your hands from my wretched life. So — it is done! and I kneel before you — your daughter — your disgrace and my own. Avenge us both; and revive your dead honour in the blood of her you gave life to!

Cres. Rise, Isabel; rise, my child. God has chosen thus to temper the cup that prosperity might else have made too sweet. It is thus he writes instruction in our hearts: let us bow down in all humility to receive it. Come, we will home, my Isabel, lean on me. *(Aside.)* 'Fore Heaven, an' I catch that captain! *(Aloud.)* Come, my girl! Courage, so.

Voice (within). Crespo! Peter Crespo!

Cres. Hark!

Voice. Peter! Peter Crespo!

Cres. Who calls?

Enter Notary.

Not. Peter Crespo! Oh, here you are at last!

Cres. Well?

Not. Oh, I 've had a rare chase. Come — a largess for my news. The corporation have elected you Mayor!

Cres. Me!

Digitized by Google

Not. Indeed. And already you are wanted in your office. The king is expected almost directly through the town; and, beside that, the captain who disturbed us all so yesterday has been brought back wounded — mortally, it is thought — but no one knows by whom.

Cres. (to himself). And so when I was meditating revenge, God himself puts the rod of justice into my hands! How shall I dare myself outrage the law when I am made its keeper? *(Aloud.)* Well, sir, I am very grateful to my fellow-townsmen for their confidence.

Not. They are even now assembled at the town hall, to commit the wand to your hands; and indeed, as I said, want you instantly.

Cres. Come then.

Isab. Oh, my father!

Cres. Ay, who can now see that justice is done you. Courage! Come. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *A Room in Zalamea.—Enter the Captain, wounded, and Sergeant.*

Capt. It was but a scratch after all. Why on earth bring me back to this confounded place?

Serg. Who could have known it was but a scratch till 't was cured? Would you have liked to be left to bleed to death in the wood?

Digitized by Google

Capt. Well, it is cured, however; and now to get clear away before the affair gets wind. Are the others here?

Serg. Yes, sir.

Capt. Let us be off then before these fellows know; else we shall have to fight for it.

Enter REBOLLEDO.

Reb. Oh, sir, the magistrates are coming!

Capt. Well, what 's that to me?

Reb. I only say they are at the door.

Capt. All the better. It will be their duty to prevent any riot the people might make if they knew of our being here.

Reb. They know, and are humming about it through the town.

Capt. I thought so. The magistrates must interfere, and then refer the cause to a court martial, where, though the affair is awkward, I shall manage to come off.

Cres. (within). Shut the doors; any soldier trying to pass, cut him down!

Enter CRESPO, *with the wand of office in his hand, Constables, Notary, &c.*

Capt. Who is it dares give such an order?

Cres. And why not?

Digitized by Google

Capt. Crespo! Well, sir. The stick you are so proud of has no jurisdiction over a soldier.

Cres. For the love of Heaven don't discompose yourself, captain; I am only come to have a few words with you, and, if you please, alone.

Capt. Well then, *(to soldiers, &c.)* retire awhile.

Cres. (to his people). And you — but hark ye; remember my orders. [*Exeunt Notary, Constables, &c.*

Cres. And now, sir, that I have used my authority to make you listen, I will lay it by, and talk to you as man to man. *(He lays down the wand.)* We are alone, Don Alvaro, and can each of us vent what is swelling in his bosom; in mine at least, till it is like to burst!

Capt. Well, sir?

Cres. Till last night (let me say it without offence) I knew not, except perhaps my humble birth, a single thing fortune had left me to desire. Of such estate as no other farmer in the district; honoured and esteemed (as now appears) by my fellow-townsmen, who neither envied me my wealth, nor taunted me as an upstart; and this even in a little community, whose usual, if not worst, fault it is to canvass each other's weaknesses. I had a daughter too — virtuously and modestly brought up, thanks to her whom heaven now holds! Whether fair, let what has passed — But I will leave what I may to silence — would to God I could

Digitized by Google

leave all, and I should not now be coming on this errand to you! But it may not be: — you must help time to redress a wound so great, as, in spite of myself, makes cry a heart not used to overflow. I must have redress. And how? The injury is done — by you: I might easily revenge myself for so public and shameful an outrage, but I would have retribution, not revenge. And so, looking about, and considering the matter on all sides, I see but one way which perhaps will not be amiss for either of us. It is this. You shall forthwith take all my substance, without reserve of a single farthing for myself or my son, only what you choose to allow us; you shall even brand us on back or forehead, and sell us like slaves or mules by way of adding to the fortune I offer you — all this, and what you will besides, if only you will with it take my daughter to wife, and restore the honour you have robbed. You will not surely eclipse your own in so doing; your children will still be your children if my grandchildren; and 't is an old saying in Castile, you know, that, "'T is the horse redeems the saddle." This is what I have to propose. Behold, *(he kneels,)* upon my knees I ask it — upon my knees, and weeping such tears as only a father's anguish melts from his frozen locks! And what is my demand? But that you should restore what you have robbed: so fatal for us to lose, so easy for you to restore; which I

Digitized by Google

could myself now wrest from you by the hand of the law, but which I rather implore of you as a mercy on my knees!

Capt. You have done at last? Tiresome old man! You may think yourself lucky I do not add your death, and that of your son, to what you call your dishonour. 'T is your daughter saves you both; let that be enough for all. As to the wrong you talk of, if you would avenge it by force, I have little to fear. As to your magistrate's stick there, it does not reach my profession at all.

Cres. Once more I implore you —

Capt. Have done — have done!

Cres. Will not these tears —

Capt. Who cares for the tears of a woman, a child, or an old man?

Cres. No pity?

Capt. I tell you I spare your life, and your son's: pity enough.

Cres. Upon my knees, asking back my own at your hands that robbed me?

Capt. Nonsense!

Cres. Who could extort it if I chose?

Capt. I tell you you could not.

Cres. There is no remedy then?

Capt. Except silence, which I recommend you as the best.

Digitized by Google

Cres. You are resolved?

Capt. I am.

Cres. (rising, and resuming his wand). Then, by God, you shall pay for it! Ho there!

Enter Constables, &c.

Capt. What are these fellows about?

Cres. Take this captain to prison.

Capt. To prison! you can't do it.

Cres. We 'll see.

Capt. Am I a bonâ fide officer or not?

Cres. And am I a straw magistrate or not? Away with him!

Capt. The king shall hear of this.

Cres. He shall — doubt it not — perhaps to-day; and shall judge between us. By the by, you had best deliver up your sword before you go.

Capt. My sword!

Cres. Under arrest, you know.

Capt. Well — take it with due respect then.

Cres. Oh yes, and you too. Hark ye, *(to Constables, &c.,)* carry the captain with due respect to Bridewell; and there with due respect clap on him a chain and hand-cuffs; and not only him, but all that were with him, (all with due respect,) respectfully taking care they communicate not together. For I mean with all due respect to examine them on the business,

Digitized by Google

and if I get sufficient evidence, with the most infinite respect of all, I 'll wring you by the neck till you 're dead, by God!

Capt. Set a beggar on horseback!

[*They carry him off.*

Enter Notary and others with REBOLLEDO, *and* CHISPA *in boy's dress.*

Not. This fellow and the page are all we could get hold of. The other got off.

Cres. Ah, this is the rascal who sung. I 'll make him sing on t' other side of his mouth.

Reb. Why, is singing a crime, sir?

Cres. So little that I 've an instrument shall make you do it as you never did before. Will you confess?

Reb. What am I to confess?

Cres. What pass'd last night?

Reb. Your daughter can tell you that better than I.

Cres. Villain, you shall die for it! [*Exit.*

Chis. Deny all, Rebolledo, and you shall be the hero of a ballad I 'll sing.

Not. And you too were of the singing party?

Chis. Ah, ah, and if I was, you can't put me to the question.

Not. And why not, pray?

Chis. The law forbids you.

Not. Oh, indeed, the law? How so, pray?

Digitized by Google

Chis. Because I 'm in the way ladies like to be who love Rebolledo. [*Exeunt, carried off, &c.*

SCENE IV. *A Room in* CRESPO'S *House.—Enter* JUAN *pursuing* ISABEL *with a dagger.*

Isab. Help, help, help! [*Exit.*

Juan. You must not live!

Enter CRESPO, *who arrests him.*

Cres. Hold! What is this?

Juan. My father! To avenge our shame —

Cres. Which is to be avenged by other means, and not by you. How come you here?

Juan. Sent back by Don Lope last night, to see after some missing soldiers, on approaching the town I heard some cries —

Cres. And drew your sword on your officer, whom you wounded, and are now under arrest from me for doing it.

Juan. Father!

Cres. And Mayor of Zalamea. Within there?

Enter Constables.

Take him to prison.

Juan. Your own son, sir?

Cres. Ay, sir, my own father, if he transgressed the law I am made guardian of. Off with him! (*They*

Digitized by Google

carry off JUAN.) So I shall keep him out of harm's way at least. And now for a little rest.

(He lays by his wand.)

Lope (calling within). Stop! Stop!

Cres. Who 's that calling without? Don Lope!

Enter LOPE.

Lope. Ay, Peter, and on a very confounded business too. But at least I would not put up any where but at your friendly house.

Cres. You are too good. But, indeed, what makes you back, sir, so suddenly?

Lope. A most disgraceful affair; the greatest insult to the service! One of my soldiers overtook me on the road, flying at full speed, and told me — Oh, the rascal!

Cres. Well, sir?

Lope. That some little pettifogging mayor of the place had got hold of a captain in my regiment, and put him in prison! 'Fore Heaven, I never really felt this confounded leg of mine till to-day, that it prevented me jumping on horseback at once to punish this trumpery Jack-in-office as he deserves. But here I am, and, by the Lord, I 'll thrash him within an inch of his life.

Cres. You will?

Lope. Will I!

Digitized by Google

Cres. But will he stand your thrashing?

Lope. Stand it or not, he shall have it.

Cres. Besides, might your captain happen to deserve what he met with? [mayor.

Lope. And, if he did, *I* am his judge, not a trumpery

Cres. This mayor is an odd sort of customer to deal with, I assure you.

Lope. Some obstinate clodpole, I suppose.

Cres. So obstinate, that if he 's made up his mind to hang your captain, he 'll do it.

Lope. Will he? I 'll see to that. And if you wish to see too, only tell me where I can find him.

Cres. Oh, close here.

Lope. You know him?

Cres. Very well, I believe.

Lope. And who is it?

Cres. Peter Crespo. *(Takes his wand.)*

Lope. By God, I suspected it!

Cres. By God, you were right.

Lope. Well, Crespo, what 's said is said.

Cres. And, Don Lope, what 's done is done.

Lope. I tell you, I want my captain.

Cres. And I tell you, I 've got him.

Lope. Do you know he is the king's officer?

Cres. Do you know he ravished my daughter?

Lope. That you are outstripping your authority in meddling with him?

Digitized by Google

Cres. Not more than he his in meddling with me.

Lope. Do you know my authority supersedes yours?

Cres. Do you know I tried first to get him to do me justice with no authority at all, but the offer of all my estate?

Lope. I tell you, *I 'll* settle the business for you.

Cres. And I tell you I never leave to another what I can do for myself. [my man.

Lope. I tell you once more and for all, I must have

Cres. And I tell you once more and for all, you shall—when you have cleared him of the depositions.

Lope. The depositions! What are they?

Cres. Oh, only a few sheets of parchment tagged together with the evidence of his own soldiers against him. [prison.

Lope. Pooh! I 'll go myself, and take him from the

Cres. Do, if you like an arquebuss ball through your body. [sure. Within there!

Lope. I am accustomed to that. But I 'll make

Enter Orderly.

Have the regiment to the market-place directly under arms. I 'll see if I 'm to have my prisoner or not.

[*Exit.*

Cres. And I — Hark ye! [*Exit, whispering to a*

[*Constable.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE V. *Before the Prison in Zalamea.— A Street in the centre.—Enter on one side* DON LOPE *with Troops; at the other, before the Prison, Labourers, Constables, &c. armed; and afterward,* CRESPO.

Lope. Soldiers, there is the prison where your captain lies. If he be not given up instantly at my last asking, set fire to the prison; and, if further resistance be made, to the whole town.

Cres. Friends and fellow-townsmen, there is the prison where lies a rascal capitally convicted —

Lope. They grow stronger and stronger. Forward, men, forward! *(As the Soldiers are about to advance, trumpets and shouts of "God save the King," within.)*

Lope. The king!

All. The king!

Enter KING PHILIP II. *through centre Street, with Train, &c. Shouting, Trumpets, &c.*

King. What is all this?

Lope. 'T is well your Majesty came so suddenly, or you would have had one of your whole towns by way of bonfire on your progress.

King. What has happened?

Lope. The mayor of this place has had the impudence to seize a captain in your Majesty's service, clap him in prison, and refuses to surrender him to me, his commander.

Digitized by Google

King. Where is this mayor?

Cres. Here, so please your Majesty.

King. Well, Mr. Mayor, what have you to offer in defence?

Cres. These papers, my Liege: in which this same captain is clearly proved guilty, on the evidence of his own soldiers, of carrying off and violating a maiden in a desolate place, and refusing her the satisfaction of marriage though peaceably entreated to it by her father with the endowment of all his substance.

Lope. This same mayor, my Liege, is the girl's father.

Cres. What has that to do with it? If another man had come to me under like circumstances, should I not have done him like justice? To be sure. And therefore, why not do for my own daughter what I should do for another's? Besides, I have just done justice against my own son for striking his captain; why should I be suspected of straining it in my daughter's favour? But here is the process; let his Majesty see for himself if the case be made out. The witnesses are at hand too; and if they or any one can prove I have suborned any evidence, or any way acted with partiality to myself, or malice to the captain, let them come forward, and let my life pay for it instead of his.

King (after reading the papers). I see not but the charge is substantiated: and 't is indeed a heavy one.

Digitized by Google

Is there any one here to deny these depositions? *(Silence.)* But, be the crime proved, *you* have no authority to judge or punish it. You must let the prisoner go.

Cres. You must send for him then, please your Majesty. In little towns like this, where public officers are few, the deliberative is forced sometimes to be the executive also.

King. What do you mean?

Cres. Your Majesty will see. *(The prison gates open, and the Captain is seen within, garrotted in a chair.)*

King. And you have dared, sir! —

Cres. Your Majesty said the sentence was just; and what is well said cannot be ill done.

King. Could you not have left it for my imperial Court to execute?

Cres. All your Majesty's justice is only one great body with many hands; if a thing be to be done, what matter by which? Or what matter erring in the inch, if one be right in the ell?

King. At least you might have beheaded him, as an officer and a gentleman.

Cres. Please your Majesty, we have so few Hidalgos hereabout, that our executioner is out of practice at beheading. And this, after all, depends on the dead gentleman's taste; if he don't complain, I don't think any one else need for him.

Digitized by Google

King. Don Lope, the thing is done; and, if unusually, not unjustly — Come, order all your soldiers away with me toward Portugal; where I must be with all despatch. For you — *(to* CRESPO,) what is your name?

Cres. Peter Crespo, please your Majesty.

King. Peter Crespo, then, I appoint you perpetual Mayor of Zalamea. And so farewell. [*Exit with Train.*

Cres. (kneeling). God save your Highness!

Lope. Friend Peter, his Highness came just in time.

Cres. For your captain, do you mean?

Lope. Come now — confess, would n't it have been better to have given up the prisoner, who, at my instance, would have married your daughter, saved her reputation, and made her wife of an Hidalgo?

Cres. Thank you, Don Lope, she has chosen to enter a convent and be the bride of one who is no respecter of Hidalgos.

Lope. Well, well, you will at least give me up the other prisoners, I suppose?

Cres. Bring them out. (JUAN, REBOLLEDO, CHISPA, *brought out.)*

Lope. Your son too!

Cres. Yes, 't was he wounded his captain, and I must punish him.

Lope. Come, come, you have done enough — at least give *him* up to his commander.

Digitized by Google

Cres. Eh? well, perhaps so; I 'll leave his punishment to you.

With which now this true story ends —
Pardon its many errors, friends.

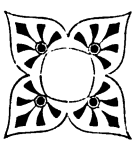
Mr. Ticknor thinks Calderon took the hint of this play from Lope de Vega's "Wise Man at Home"; and he quotes (though without noticing this coincidence) a reply of Lope's hero to some one advising him to assume upon his wealth, that is much of a piece with Crespo's answer to Juan on a like score in the first act of this piece. Only that in Lope the answer *is* an answer: which, as Juan says, in Calderon it is not; so likely to happen with a borrowed answer.

This is Mr. Ticknor's version from the older play:

> He that was born to live in humble state
> Makes but an awkward knight, do what you will.
> My father means to die as he has liv'd,
> The same plain collier that he always was;
> And I too must an honest ploughman die.
> 'T is but a single step or up or down;
> For men there must be that will plough or dig,
> And when the vase has once been fill'd, be sure
> 'T will always savour of what first it held.

I must observe of the beginning of Act III., that in this translation Isabel's speech is intentionally reduced to prose, not only in measure of words, but in some degree of idea also. It would have been far easier to make at least verse of almost the most elevated and purely beautiful piece of Calderon's poetry I know; a speech (the beginning of it) worthy of the Greek Antigone, which, after two Acts of homely talk, Calderon has put into his *Labradora's* mouth. This, admitting for all culmination of passion, and Spanish passion, must excuse my tempering it to the key in which (measure only kept) Calderon himself sets out.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER.

Digitized by Google

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DON ALONSO.

DONNA CLARA, } *his Daughters.*
DONNA EUGENIA, }

DON TORRIBIO, *his Nephew.*

MARI NUÑO, }
BRIGIDA, } *his Servants.*
OTAÑEZ, }

DON FELIX, }
DON JUAN, } *Gallants.*
DON PEDRO, }

HERNANDO, *Don Felix's Servant.*

Digitized by Google

BEWARE OF SMOOTH WATER.

(Guardate de la Agua mansa.)

ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Room in* DON ALONSO'S *House at Madrid.—Enter* ALONSO *and* OTAÑEZ, *meeting.*

Otan. MY own dear master!
Alon. Welcome, good Otañez,
My old and trusty servant!
Otan. Have I liv'd
To see what I so long have long'd to see,
My dear old master home again!
Alon. You could not
Long for 't, Otañez, more than I myself.
What wonder, when my daughters, who, you know,
Are the two halves that make up my whole heart,
Silently call'd me home, and silently
(For maiden duty still gagg'd filial love)
Out of the country shade where both have grown,
Urg'd me to draw the blossom of their youth
Where it might ripen in its proper day.

Digitized by Google

Otan. Indeed, indeed, sir. Oh that my dear lady
Were but alive to see this happy hour!
Alon. Nay, good Otañez, mar it not recalling
What, ever sleeping in the memory,
Needs but a word to waken into tears.
God have her in his keeping! He best knows
How I have suffered since the king, my master,
Despatching me with charge to Mexico,
I parted from her ne'er to see her more;
And now come back to find her gone for ever!
You know 't was not the long and roaring seas
Frighted her for herself, but these two girls —
For them she stay'd — and full of years and honour
Died, when God will'd! and I have hasten'd home
Well as I may, to take into my hands
The charge death slipp'd from hers.
Otan. Your own good self!
Though were there ever father who could well
Have left that charge to others, it was you,
Your daughters so religiously brought up
In convent with their aunt at Alcalá.
Well, you are come, and God be prais'd for it!
And, at your bidding, here are they, and I,
And good old Mari Nuño — all come up
To meet you at Madrid. I could not wait
The coach's slower pace, but must spur on
To kiss my old master's hand.

Digitized by Google

Alon. Myself had gone
To meet them; but despatches of the king's
Prevented me. They 're well?

Voices (within). Make way there — way!

Otan. And lovely as the dawn. And hark! are here
To answer for themselves.

Enter CLARA, EUGENIA, MARI NUÑO, *as from travel.* [prayers

Clara (kneeling). Sir, and my father — by my daily
Heav'n, won at last in suffering me to kiss
These honour'd hands, leaves me no more to ask,
Than at these honour'd feet to die,
With its eternal blessing afterward.

Eug. And I, my father, grateful as I am
To Heav'n, for coming to your feet once more,
Have yet this more to ask — to live with you
For many, many happy years to come!

Alon. Oh, not in vain did nature fix the heart
In the mid bosom, like a sun to move
Each circling arm with equal love around!
Come to them — one to each — and take from me
Your lives anew. God bless you!
Come, we are here together in Madrid,
And in the sphere where you were born to move.
This is the house that is to be your own

Digitized by Google

Until some happy lover calls you his;
Till which I must be father, lover, husband,
In one. Brigida!

Enter BRIGIDA.

Brig. Sir?

Alon. My daughters' rooms
Are ready?

Brig. Ay, sir, as the sky itself
For the sun's coming.

Alon. Go and see them then,
And tell me how you like what I have bought,
And fitted up for your reception.

Clara. I thank you, sir, and bless this happy day,
Though leaving my lov'd convent far away.

Eug. (aside). And I twice bless it, that no longer hid
In a dull cell, I come to see Madrid.

[*Exeunt* CLARA *and* EUGENIA.

Mari Nuño. Now the young ladies, sir, have had their turn,
Shall not I kiss your hand?

Alon. Oh, welcome too,
Good Mari Nuño; who have been so long
A mother to them both. And, by the by,
Good Mari Nuño, now we are alone,
I 'd hear from you, who know them both so well;
Their several characters and dispositions,

Digitized by Google

And not, as 't were, come blindfold to the charge
That Heav'n has laid upon me.
Mari. You say well, sir.
Well, I might say at once, and truly too,
That nothing need be said in further praise
But that they are your daughters. But to pass,
Lest you should think I flatter,
From general to individual,
And to begin with the eldest, Donna Clara;
Eldest in years and in discretion too,
Indeed the very pearl of prudence, sir,
And maidenly reserve; her eyes still fixt
On earth in modesty, or heav'n in prayer;
As gentle as a lamb, almost as silent;
And never known to say an angry word:
And, such her love of holy quietude,
Unless at your desire, would never leave
Her cloister and her missal. She 's, in short,
An angel upon earth, whom to be near
And wait on, one would sell oneself a slave.
So much for her. Donna Eugenia,
Though unexceptionable in heart and head,
As, God forgive me, any child of yours
Must be, is different,— not for me to say
Better or worse,— but very different:
Of a quick spirit, loving no control;
Indeed, as forward as the other shy;

Digitized by Google

Quick to retort, and sharply; so to speak,
Might sometimes try the patience of a saint;
Longing to leave a convent for the world,
To see and to be seen; makes verses too;
Would not object, I think, to have them made
(Or love, may be) to her — you understand;
Not that I mean to say —

Alon. Enough, enough.

Thanks for your caution as your commendation:
How could I fortify against weak points
Unless I knew of them? And to this end,
Although Eugenia be the younger sister,
I 'll see her married first; husband and children
The best specific for superfluous youth:
And to say truth, good Mari, the very day
Of my arrival hither, I despatch'd
A letter to my elder brother's son,
Who still maintains our dwindled patrimony
Up in the mountains, which I would reclaim,
Or keep it rather in its lawful line,
By an alliance with a child of mine.
All falls out luckily. Eugenia
Wedded to him shall make herself secure,
And the two stems of Cuadradillos so
Unite and once more flourish, at a blow. [*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE II. *A Room in* DON FELIX'S *House;* DON FELIX, *and* HERNANDO *dressing him.*

Hern. Such fine ladies, sir, come to be our neighbours.

Fel. So they ought to be, such a noise as they made in coming.

Hern. One of them already betroth'd, however.

Fel. So let her, and married too, if she would only let me sleep quiet But what kind of folks are they?

Hern. Oh, tip-top. Daughters of the rich old Indian who has bought the house and gardens opposite, and who will give them all his wealth when they marry, which they say he has brought them to Madrid expressly to do.

Fel. But are they handsome?

Here. I thought so, sir, as I saw them alighting.

Fel. Rich and handsome then?

Hern. Yes, sir.

Fel. Two good points in a woman, at all events, of which I might profit, such opportunities as I have.

Hern. Have a care, sir, for the old servant who told me this, told me also that the papa is a stout fiery old fellow, who 'd stick the Great Turk himself if he caught him trifling with his daughters.

Fel. That again is not so well; for, though I 'm not the Great Turk, I 've no mind to share that part of his fortune. But of the two girls, what said your old

Digitized by Google

servant? who, as such, I suppose told you all that was amiss in them at least.

Hern. Well, you shall judge. One, the oldest, is very discreet.

Fel. Ah, I told you so.

Hern. The other lively.

Fel. Come, that sounds better. One can tackle her hand to hand, but the grave one one can only take a long shot at with the eyes.

Hern. Whichever it be, I should like to see you yourself hit one of these days, sir.

Fel. Me? The woman is not yet cast who will do that. If I meddle with these it is only because they lie so handy.

Hern. And handsome as well as handy!

Fel. Pooh! I would n't climb a wall to pluck the finest fruit in the world. But hark! some one 's at the door. See who 't is.

Enter DON JUAN *in travelling dress.*

Juan. I, Felix, who seeing your door open, could not but walk in without further ceremony.

Fel. You know that it and my heart are ever open to you. Welcome, welcome, Don Juan! all the more welcome for being unexpected: for though I had heard we might one day have you back, I did not think so soon.

Digitized by Google

Juan. Why, the truth is, I got my pardon sooner than I expected.

Fel. Though not than I prayed for. But tell me all about it.

Juan. You know I was obliged to fly to Italy after that unlucky duel. Well, there the great duke of Terranova, who (as good luck would have it) was then going ambassador to Hungary, took a fancy to me, and carried me with him; and, pleased with what service I did him, interested himself in my fortunes, and one good day, when I was least expecting it, with his own hand put my pardon into mine.

Fel. A pardon that never should have needed asking, all of an unlucky quarrel at cards.

Juan. So you and the world suppose, Felix: but in truth there was something more behind.

Fel. Ah?

Juan. Why, the truth is, I was courting a fair lady, and with fair hope of success, though she would not confess it, urging that her father being away at the time, her mother would not consent in his absence. Suddenly I found I had a rival, and took occasion of a casual dispute at cards to wipe out the score of jealousy; which I did with a vengeance to both of us, he being killed on the spot, and I, forc'd to fly the country, must, I doubt, ere this, have died out of my lady's memory, where only I cared to live.

Digitized by Google

Fel. Ay, you know well enough that in Madrid Oblivion lies in the very lap of Remembrance, whether of love or loathing. I thank my stars I never pinn'd my faith on woman yet.

Juan. Still the same sceptic?

Fel. Ay, they are fine things, but my own heart's ease is finer still; and if one party must be deceived, I hold it right in self-defence it should not be I. But come; that you may not infect me with your faith, nor I you with my heresy, tell me about your journey.

Juan. How could it be otherwise than a pleasant one, such pageants as I had to entertain me by the way?

Fel. Oh, you mean our royal master's nuptials?

Juan. Ay! [upon the spot.

Fel. I must hear all about them, Juan; even now,

Juan. Well, then, you know at least, without my telling you, how great a debt Germany has owed us—

Enter DON PEDRO *hastily.*

Ped. My dear Don Felix!

Fel. Don Pedro! By my faith, my door must be the door of heaven, I think; for all the good keep coming in by 't. But how comes your University term so soon over?

Ped. Alas, it 's *not* over, but—

Fel. Well?

Digitized by Google

Ped. I 'll tell you.

Juan. If I be in your way —

Ped. No, no, sir, if you are Felix's friend you have the key of my confidence. My story is easily told. A lady I am courting in Alcalá is suddenly come up to Madrid, and I am come after her. And to escape my father's wrath at playing truant, I must beg sanctuary in your house awhile.

Fel. And this once will owe me thanks for your entertainment, since I have Don Juan's company to offer you.

Juan. Nay, 't is I have to thank you for Don Pedro's.

Fel. Only remember, both of you, that however you may amuse one another, you are not to entertain me with your several hearts and darts. Hernando, get us something to eat; and till it comes you shall set off rationally at least, Juan, with the account of the royal nuptials you were beginning just as Don Pedro came in.

Juan. On condition you afterwards recount to me your rejoicings in Madrid meanwhile.

Fel. Agreed.

Ped. I come in happy time to hear you both.

Juan. You know, as I was saying, what a debt
Germany has ow'd us since our fair Maria
Her title of the Royal Child of Spain
Set in the crown of Hungary — a debt
They only could repay us as they do,

Digitized by Google

Returning us one of the self-same stock,
So like herself in beauty and desert,
We seem but taking what we gave away.
If into Austria's royal hand we gave
Our royal rose, she now returns us one
Sprung of the self-same stem, as fair, as sweet
In maiden graces; and if double-dyed
In the imperial purple, yet so fresh,
She scarce has drunk the dawns of fourteen Aprils.
The marriage contract sign'd, the marriage self
Delay'd, too long for loyal Spain's desire,
That like the bridegroom for her coming burn'd,
(But happiness were hardly happiness
Limp'd it not late,) till her defective years
Reach'd their due blossom — Ah, happy defect,
That every uncondition'd hour amends!
At last arose the day — the day of days —
When from her royal eyrie in the North
The imperial eaglet flew. Young Ferdinand,
King of Bohemia and Hungary
Elect, who not in vain Rome's holy hand
Awaits to bind the laurel round his brow,
As proxy for our king espous'd her first,
And then, all lover-like, as far as Trent
Escorted her, with such an equipage
As when the lords and princes of three realms
Out-do each other in magnificence

Digitized by Google

Of gold and jewel, ransackt from the depths
Of earth and sea, to glitter in the eye
Of Him who sees and lights up all from heav'n.
So, like a splendid star that trails her light
Far after her, she cross'd fair Italy,
When Doria, Genoa's great Admiral,
Always so well-affected to our crown,
Took charge of her sea-conduct; which awhile,
Till winds and seas were fair, she waited for
In Milan; till, resolv'd to wait no more,
The sea, that could not daunt her with his rage,
Soon as her foot was on his yellow shore,
Call'd up his Tritons and his Nereids
Who love and make a calm, to smooth his face
And still his heaving breast; on whose blue flood
The golden galley in defiance burn'd,
Her crew in wedding pearl and silver drest;
Her silken sail and cordage, fluttering
With myriad flags and streamers of all dye,
Sway'd like a hanging garden over-head,
Amid whose blossoms stood the royal bride,
A fairer Venus than did ever float
Over the seas to her dominions
Quivering the arrows of diviner love.
Then to the sound of trump and clarion
The royal galley, and with her forty more
That followed in her wake as on their queen,

Digitized by Google

Weigh'd, shook out sail, and dipp'd all oars at once,
Making the flood clap hands in acclamation;
And so with all their streamers, as 't were spring
Floating away to other hemispheres,
Put out to sea; and touching not the isles
That gem the midway deep — not from distrust
Of friendly France in whose crown they are set,
And who (as mighty states contend in peace
With courtesies as with hard blows in war)
Swell'd the triumphal tide with pageantries
I may not stop to tell — but borne upon,
And (as I think) bearing, fair wind and wave,
The moving city on its moving base
With sail and oar enter'd the Spanish Main,
Which, flashing emerald and diamond,
Leap'd round the golden prow that clove between,
And kiss'd the happy shore that first declin'd
To meet its mistress. Happy Denia,
That in her golden sand holds pearly-like
The first impression of that royal foot!
I will not tell — let Felix, who was here,
And has new breath — how, landed happily,
Our loyal Spain — yea, with what double welcome —
Receiv'd the niece and consort of our king,
Whom, one and both, and both in one, may Heav'n
Bless with fair issue, and all happiness,
For years and years to come!

Digitized by Google

Enter HERNANDO.

Hern. Sir, sir!

Fel. Well?

Hern. Your two new neighbours — just come to the window.

Fel. Gentlemen, we must waive my story then, for, as the proverb goes, "*My Lady first.*" *(He looks out.)* By Heaven, they are divine!

Juan. Let me see. *(Aside.)* By Heaven, 't is she!

Ped. Come, it is my turn now. *(Aside.)* Eugenia! I must keep it to myself.

Fel. I scarce know which is handsomest.

Juan. Humph! both pretty girls enough.

Ped. Yes, very well.

Fel. Listen, gentlemen; whether handsome, or pretty, or very well, or all three, you must not stare at them from my window so vehemently; being the daughters of a friend of mine, and only just come to Madrid.

Juan (aside). That the first thing I should see on returning to Madrid, is she for whose love I left it!

Ped. (aside). That the first thing I see here is what I came for the very purpose of seeing!

Hern. (entering). Table is serv'd, sir.

Fel. To table, then. I know not how it is with you, gentlemen, but for myself, my appetite is stronger than my love.

Digitized by Google

Juan (aside to FELIX). You jest as usual; but I assure you it is one of those very ladies on whom my fortune turns! [*Exit.*

Fel. Adieu to one then.

Ped. All this is fun to you, Felix; but believe me, one of those ladies is she I have followed from Alcalá. [*Exit.*

Fel. Adieu to both then — unless indeed you are both of you in love with the same. But, thank God,

I that am in love with neither,
Need not plague myself for either.
The least expense of rhyme or care
That man can upon woman spare.

But they are very handsome nevertheless. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. *An Apartment in* DON ALONSO'S *House.* —*Enter* CLARA *and* EUGENIA.

Clara. Is 't not a pretty house, Eugenia,
And all about it?

Eug. I dare say you think so.

Clara. But do not you then?

Eug. No — to me it seems
A sort of out-court and repository,
Fit but for old Hidalgos and Duennas,
Too stale and wither'd for the blooming world,
To wear away in.

Digitized by Google

Clara. I like its quietude;
This pretty garden too.
Eug. A pretty thing
To come for to Madrid — a pretty garden!
I tell you were it fuller of all flowers.
Than is a Dutchman's in his tulip-time,
I want the lively street whose flowers are shops,
Carriages, soldiers, ladies, cavaliers,
Plenty of dust in summer, dirt in winter,
And where a woman sitting at her blind
Sees all that passes. Then this furniture!
Clara. Well — surely velvet curtains, sofas, chairs,
Rich Indian carpets, beds of Damascene,
Chandeliers, gilded mirrors, pictures too —
What would you have, Eugenia?
Eug. All very well,
But, after all, no marvellous result
Of ten years spent in golden India.
Why, one has heard how fine a thing it is
To be my Lord Mayor's daughter; what must be,
Methought, to own a dowry from Peru!
And when you talk about the furniture,
Pictures, chairs, carpets, mirrors, and all that —
The best of all is wanting.
Clara. What is that? [coach!
Eug. Why, a coach, woman! Heav'n and earth, a
What use is all the money-bonds and gold

Digitized by Google

He has been boasting of in all his letters,
Unless, now come at last, he plays the part
We 've heard so long rehearsing?

Clara. Not to spare
Your father even, Eugenia! For shame!
'T is time to tie your roving tongue indeed.
Consider, too, we are not in the country,
Where tongue and eyes, Eugenia, may run wild
Without offence to uncensorious woods;
But in a city, with its myriad eyes
Inquisitively turn'd to watch, and tongues
As free and more malicious than yours
To tell — where honour's monument is wax,
And shame's of brass. I know, Eugenia,
High spirits are not in themselves a crime;
But if to men they *seem* so? — that 's the question.
For it is almost better to do ill
With a good outward grace than well without;
Especially a woman; most of all
One not yet married; whose reputation
One breath of scandal, like a flake of snow,
May melt away; one of those tenderest flowers
Whose leaves ev'n the warm breath of flattery
Withers as fast as envy's bitterest wind,
That surely follows short-liv'd summer praise.
Ev'n those who praise your beauty, grace, or wit,
Will be the first, if you presume on them,

Digitized by Google

To pull the idol down themselves set up,
Beginning with malicious whispers first,
Until they join the storm themselves have rais'd.
And most if one be giv'n oneself to laugh
And to make laugh: the world will doubly yearn
To turn one's idle giggle into tears.
I say this all by way of warning, sister,
Now we are launcht upon this dangerous sea.
Consider of it.

Eug. "Which that all may do
May Heav'n—" Come, Clara, if the sermon 's done,
Pray finish it officially at once,
And let us out of church. These homilies
In favour of defunct proprieties,
Remind one of old ruff and armour worn
By Don Punctilio and Lady Etiquette
A hundred years ago, and past with them
And all their tedious ancestors for ever.
I am alive, young, handsome, witty, rich,
And come to town, and mean to have my fling,
Not caring what malicious people say,
If nothing true to say against my honour.
And so with all sail set, and streamers flying,
(A coach shall be my ship, and I will have it!)
I mean to glide along the glittering streets
And down the Prado, as I go along
Capturing what eyes and hearts I find by the way,

Digitized by Google

Heedless of every little breath of scandal
That such as you turn back affrighted by.
I 'll know the saints' days better than the saints
Themselves; the holidays and festivals
Better than over-done apprentices.
If a true lover comes whom I can like
As he loves me, I shall not turn away:
As for the rest who flutter round in love,
Not with myself, but with my father's wealth,
Or with themselves, or any thing but me,
You shall see, Clara, how I 'll play with them,
Till, having kept them on my string awhile
For my own sport, I 'll e'en turn them adrift
And let them go, the laugh all on my side.
And therefore when you see —

Clara. How shall I dare
To see what even now I quake to hear!

Enter ALONSO.

Alon. Clara! Eugenia!

Both. Sir?

Alon. Good news, good news, my girls! What think you? My nephew, Don Torribio Cuadradillos, my elder brother's elder son, head of our family and inheritor of the estate, is coming to visit me; will be here indeed almost directly. What think you now!

Digitized by Google

Eug. (aside). One might have thought, from such a flourish of trumpets, the king was coming at least.

Alon. Mari Nuño!

Mari (entering). Sir?

Alon. Let a chamber be got ready for my nephew, Don Torribio, directly. Brigida!

Brig. (entering). Sir?

Alon. See that linen be taken up into Don Torribio's room. Otañez, have dinner ready for my nephew, Don Torribio, directly he arrives. And you two, *(to his daughters,)* I expect you will pay him all attention; as head of the family, consider. Ay, and if he *should* take a fancy to one of you — I know not he will — but if he *should*, I say, whichever it be, she will take precedence of her sister for ever. *(Aside.)* This I throw out as a bait for Eugenia.

Eug. It must be Clara, then, sir, for she is oldest, you know. [Eugenia.

Clara. Not in discretion and all wife-like qualities,

Eug. Clara!

Alon. Hark! in the court!

Don Torribio (speaking loud within). Hoy! good man there! Can you tell me if my uncle lives here-

Alon. 'T is my nephew, surely! [about?

Torr. (within). Why, fellow, I mean of course Don Alonso — who has two daughters, by the token I 'm to marry one of 'em.

Digitized by Google

Alon. 'T is he! I will go and receive him. [*Exit.*

Torr. (within). Very well, then. Hold my stirrup,

Eug. What a figure! [Lorenzo.

Enter ALONSO *and* TORRIBIO.

Alon. My nephew, Don Torribio, giving thanks to Heaven for your safe arrival at my house, I hasten to welcome you as its head.

Torr. Ay, uncle, and a head taller, I promise you, than almost any body in the parish.

Alon. Let me introduce your cousins to you, who are so anxious for your acquaintance.

Torr. Ah, that 's proper of 'em, is n't it?

Both. Welcome, sir.

Alon. And how are you, nephew?

Torr. Very tired, I promise you: for the way is long and my horse a rough goer, so as I 've lost leather.

Alon. Sit down, and rest till they bring dinner.

Torr. Sitting an't the way to mend it. But, however — *(Sits.)* Nay, though I be head of the house, I an't proud — you can all of you sit down too.

Clara (aside). Amiable humility! [be its head!

Eug. (aside). No wonder the house is crazy if this

Torr. Well, now I come to look at you, cousins, I may say you are both of you handsome girls, indeed; which 'll put me to some trouble.

Digitized by Google

Clara. How so, cousin?

Torr. Why, did n't you ever hear that if you put an ass between two bundles of hay, he 'll die without knowing which to begin on, eh?

Alon. His father's pleasant humour!

Clara. A courteous comparison!

Eug. (aside). Which holds as far as the ass at least.

Torr. Well, there 's a remedy. I say, uncle, must n't cousins get a dispensation before they marry?

Alon. Yes, nephew.

Torr. Well then, when you 're about it, you can get two dispensations, and I can marry both my cousins. Aha! Well, but, uncle, how are you? I had forgot to ask you that.

Alon. Quite well, in seeing you in my house at last, and to reap, I trust, the fruits of all my travel.

Torr. Ah, you may say that. Oh, cousins, if you could only see my pedigree and patent, in a crimson velvet case; and all my forefathers painted in a row — I have it in my saddle-bags, and if you 'll wait a minute —

Enter MARI NUÑO.

Mari. Dinner 's ready.

Torr. (looking at MARI). Lord a' mercy, uncle, what 's this? something you brought from India, belike; does it speak?

Alon. Nay, nephew, 't is our Duenna.

Digitized by Google

Torr. A what?

Alon. A Duenna.

Torr. A tame one?

Alon. Come, come, she tells us dinner 's ready.

Torr. Yes, if you believe her; but I 've heard say, Duennas always lie. However, I 'll go and see for myself. [*Exit.*

Clara. What a cousin!

Eug. What a lover!

Mari. Foh! I wonder how the watch came to let the plague into the city! [*Exit.*

Alon. You are silent, both of you?

Both. Not I, sir.

Alon. I understand you; Don Torribio
Pleases you not — well, he 's a little rough;
But wait a little; see what a town life
Will do for him; all come up so at first,
The finest diamonds, you know, the roughest —
Oh, I rejoice my ancestor's estate
Shall to my grandchildren revert again!
For this I tell you — one, I care not which,
But one of you, shall marry Don Torribio:
And let not her your cousin does not choose,
For one more courtly think herself reserv'd;
By Heaven she shall marry, if e'er marry,
One to the full as rough and country-like.
What, I to see my wealth, so hardly won,

Digitized by Google

Squander'd away by some fine town gallant,
In silks and satins! see my son-in-law
Spend an estate upon a hat and feather!
I 'll tell you I 'll not have it. One of you
Must marry Don Torribio. [*Exit.*

Clara. I 'll die first.

Eug. And I 'll live an old maid — which much is worst.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Room in* DON FELIX'S *House.*— FELIX *and* HERNANDO; *to whom enter* JUAN.

Fel. WELL, Juan, and how slept you?

Juan. As one must
In your house, Felix; had not such a thought
No house can quiet, woke me long ere dawn.

Fel. Indeed! How so?

Juan. Felix, the strangest thing —
But now we are alone I 'll tell you all.
Last night — the very moment that I saw
That angel at the window, as at Heaven's gate —
The fire that I myself had thought half dead
Under the ashes of so long an absence,
Sprung up anew into full blaze. Alas!

Digitized by Google

But one brief moment did she dawn on us,
Then set, to rise no more all the evening,
Watch as I would. But day is come again,
And as I think, Felix, the holyday
When our new Queen shall make her solemn entry
Into Madrid; and she, my other Queen,
Will needs be up — be up and out betimes;
So I forestall the sun in looking for her,
And now will to the door beneath her window
Better to watch her rising.
But, as you love me, not a word of this
Breathe to Don Pedro. [*Exit.*

Fel. And does he think
Because his memory of her is quick,
Hers is of him? Aha!

Hern. Nay, if he like it,
"Oh let him be deceiv'd!"

Fel. 'T was wisely said
By him who self-deception us'd to call
The cheapest and the dearest thing of all.
Ha! here 's the other. I begin to think
My house is turn'd into a Lazar-house
Of crazy lovers. (*Enter* PEDRO.)
Good day, Don Pedro.

Ped. As it needs must be
To one who hails it in your house, and opposite
My lady's! Oh, you cannot think, my Felix,

Digitized by Google

With what a blessed consciousness of this
I woke this morning! I can scarcely believe 't.
Why, in your house, I shall have chance on chance,
Nay, certainty of seeing her — *to-day*
Most certainly. But I 'll go post myself
Before the door; she will be out betimes
To mass.

Fel. Well, you will find Don Juan there.

Ped. Eh? Well, so much the better, I can do 't
With less suspicion; nay, with none at all
If you will go with us. Only, Don Felix,
Breathe not a word to him about my love.

As he is going, re-enter JUAN.

Fel. Juan again?

Juan. I only came to ask
What church we go to? *(Aside to Fel.)* Let us keep
at home.

Fel. Don Pedro, what say you?

Ped. Oh, where you please.
(Aside.) Stir not!

Fel. (aside). How easy to oblige two friends
Who ask the same, albeit with divers ends! [haps,
(Aloud.) What, are your worships both in love, per-
As Spanish cavaliers are bound to be,
And think I 've nothing else to do, forsooth,
Than follow each upon his wildgoose chase?

Digitized by Google

Forgetting I may take 't into my head
To fall in love myself — perhaps with one,
Or both, of those fair ladies chance has brought
Before my windows. Now I think upon 't,
I am, or mean to be, in love with one;
And, to decide with which, I 'll e'en wait here
Till they both sally forth to church themselves.
So, gentlemen, would you my company,
I must not go with you, you stay with me.

Ped. Willingly. [well

Juan. Oh, most willingly! *(Aside to Fel.)* How
You manag'd it.

Ped. (aside to Fel.) 'T is just as I could wish.

Fel. (aside). And just as I, if thereby I shall learn
Whether they love the same; and, if the same,
Whether the one — But come, come! 't is too late
For wary me to wear love's cap and bells.

Juan. Since we must do your bidding on this score,
We 'll e'en make you do ours upon another,
And make you tell us, as you promis'd both,
And *owe* to me — what, when our Queen was landed,
You fine folks of Madrid did in her honour.

Ped. Ay, if you needs will fetter our free time,
Help us at least to pass it by the story
You had begun.

Fel. Well then, to pick it up
Where Juan left it for us, on the shore.

Digitized by Google

There, when our Queen was landed, as I hear,
The Countess Medellin, her Chamberlain,
Of the Cardona family, receiv'd her,
And the Lord Admiral on the King's part,
With pomp that needed no excuse of haste,
And such a retinue (or who claims not
To be the kinsman, friend, or follower,
Of such a name?) as I believe Castile
Was almost drain'd to follow in his wake.
Oh, noble house! in whom the chivalry
Of courage, blameless worth, and loyalty,
Is nature's patent of inheritance
From generation to generation!
And so through ringing Spain, town after town,
And every town a triumph, on they pass'd.
Madrid meanwhile —

Juan. Stop, stop! They 're coming out!

Ped. Where! Let me see.

Juan. The servant only.

Fel. Nay,
They 'll follow soon.

Juan. Till when, on with your story.

Fel. Madrid then, sharing in the general joy
Of her king's marriage, and with one whose mother
Herself had nurst — though, as you said, half sick
Of hope deferr'd, had, at the loyal call,
That never fails in Spain, drawn to her heart

Digitized by Google

The life-blood of the realm's nobility
To do her honour; not only when she came,
But, in anticipation of her coming,
With such prelusive pomps, as if you turn
Far up time's stream as history can go,
In hymeneals less august than these,
You shall find practis'd — torchéd troop and masque,
With solemn and preliminary dance,
Epithalamium and sacrifice,
Invoking Hymen's blessing. So Madrid,
Breathing new Christian life in Pagan pomp,
With such epithalamium as all Spain
Rais'd up to Heav'n, into sweet thunder tun'd
Beyond all science by a people's love,
Began her pageant. First, the nightly masque,
So fair as I have never seen the like,
Nor shall again; nor which, unless you draw
On your imagination for the type
Of what I tell, can I depict to you;
When, to the sound of trumpet and recorder,
The chiming poles of Spain and Germany
Beginning, drew the purple mountain down,
Glittering with veins of ore and silver trees,
All flower'd with plumes, and taper-starr'd above,
With monster and volcano breathing fire,
While to and fro torch-bearing maskers ran
Like meteors; all so illuminating night,

Digitized by Google

That the succeeding sun hid pale in cloud,
And wept with envy, till he dawn'd at length
Upon the famous Amphitheatre,
Which, in its masonry out-doing all
That Rome of a like kind in ruin shows,
This day out-did itself,
In number, rank, and glory of spectators,
Magnificence of retinue, multitude,
Size, beauty, and courage, of the noble beasts
Who came to dye its yellow dust with blood;
As each horn'd hero of the cloven hoof,
Broad-chested, and thick-neckt, and wrinkle-brow'd,
Rush'd roaring in, and tore the ground with 's foot,
As saying, "Lo! this grave is yours or mine!"
While that yet nobler beast, noblest of all,
Who knights the very knighthood that he carries,
Proud in submission to a nobler will,
Spurn'd all his threats, and, touch'd by the light spur,
His rider glittering like a god aloft,
Turn'd onset into death. Fight follow'd fight,
Till darkness came at last, sending Madrid
Already surfeited with joy, to dream
Of greater, not unanxious that the crown
And centre of the centre of the world
Should not fall short of less renowned cities
In splendour of so great a celebration;
While too the hundreds of a hundred nations,

Digitized by Google

In wonder or in envy cramm'd her streets;
Until her darling come at last, whose spouse
Shall lay his own two empires at her feet,
And crown her thrice; as Niece, and Spouse, and Queen.
Juan. A charming story, finisht just in time,
For look! *(They look out.)*
Fel. That is the father, Don Alonso.
Juan. Indeed!
Ped. (aside). That 's he then! But that strange man with him,
Who 's he?
Hern. Oh, I can tell you that;
His nephew, an Asturian gentleman,
Betroth'd to one of the daughters.
Juan. (aside). Not to mine!
Ped. (aside). Not my Eugenia, or by Heav'n —
But we shall scarcely see them, Felix, here,
Wrapt in their mantles too.
Fel. And I would pay
My compliment to Don Alonso.
Juan. Come,
Let us go down with you into the street.
(Aside.) Oh love, that in her memory survive
One thought of me, not dead if scarce alive! [still
Ped. (aside). Oh, may her bosom whisper her 't is
Her eyes that draw me after where they will!
[*Exeunt.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE II. *Street between the Houses of* ALONSO *and* FELIX: ALONSO *and* TORRIBIO *waiting.*

Alon. If you really affect Eugenia, nephew,—*(aside)* as I wished — I will communicate with her after church, and if all be well (as I cannot doubt) get a dispensation forthwith. But they are coming.

Enter from ALONSO'S *door* CLARA, EUGENIA, *in mantles, the latter with a handkerchief in her hand;* MARI NUÑO, BRIGIDA, *and* OTAÑEZ *behind; and at the same time* FELIX, JUAN, *and* PEDRO *opposite.* [street.

Clara. Cover your face, Eugenia. People in the

Eug. Well, I 'm not ashamed of it. *(Aside.)* Don Pedro! and Don Juan!

Fel. (whispers). Which is it, Don Juan?

Juan. She with the handkerchief in her hand. I 'll go wait for her at the church. [*Exit.*

Ped. (to FELIX). That is she with the white kerchief in her hand. I 'll follow them.

Fel. (aside). The same, then!

Clara. Eugenia, lend me your handkerchief, it is hot. *(Takes the handkerchief and uncovers her face towards* FELIX.) And let us go, and do not you look behind you.

Fel. And she I most admired.

[*Exeunt* CLARA, EUGENIA, *&c.*, PEDRO *after them.*

Digitized by Google

Torr. Uncle, what are these fellows hanging about our doors for?

Alon. Nay, 't is the public street, you know.

Torr. What, my cousins' street?

Alon. To be sure.

Torr. I 'll not suffer any one I don't like to hang about it, however, and least of all these perfumery puppies.

Alon. But if they happen to live here, nephew?

Torr. Don't let 'em live here, then.

Alon. But if they own houses here?

Torr. They must n't own houses, then.

Fel. Don Alonso, permit me to kiss your hand on your arrival among us. I ought indeed first to have waited upon you in your own house; but this happy chance makes me anticipate etiquette.

Torr. Coxcomb!

Alon. Thank you, sir; had I known you intended me such a favour, I should have anticipated your anticipation by waiting upon you. Give me leave to present to you my nephew, Don Torribio de Cuadradillos, who will also be proud of your acquaintance.

Torr. No such thing, I shan't at all.

Alon. Nephew, nephew!

Fel. I trust you are well, sir?

Torr. Oh, so, so, thank ye, for the matter of that,

Digitized by Google

neither well nor ill, but mixt-like. (ALONSO *salutes* FELIX *and exit with* TORRIBIO.) [name,

Fel. Now then, I know both face, and dress, and,
And that my rival friends both love the same;
The same too that myself of the fair pair
Thought yester-eve the fairest of the fair.
Was 't not enough for my two friends that they
Turn enemies — must I too join the fray?
Oh, how at once to reconcile all three,
Those two with one another, and with me!

Re-enter JUAN *hastily.*

Juan. On seeing me, my friend, her colour chang'd:
She loves me still, Don Felix! I am sure
She loves me! Is not the face — we know it is,
The tell-tale index of the heart within?
Oh happiness! at once within your house,
And next my lady's! What is now to do
But catch the ball good fortune throws at us!
You know her father, you will visit him
Of course, and then — and then — what easier?
Draw me in with you, or after you — or perhaps
A letter first — ay, and then afterward —
But why so dumb?

Fel. I scarce know how to answer.
Juan, you know I am too much your friend
To do you any spite?

Digitized by Google

Juan. How could I dream it?

Enter PEDRO *hastily.*

Ped. Oh, Felix, if my love —

Fel. (aside). The other now!

He must be stopt. A moment, gentlemen,
Before you speak, and let me tell you first
A case of conscience you must solve for me.
You both have mighty matters, I doubt not,
To tell me, such as warm young gentlemen
Are never at a loss for in Madrid;
But I may have my difficulties too.
(Aside.) The same will serve for both.

Ped. Well, let us hear.

Fel. Suppose some friend of yours, dear as you will,
Loving your neighbour's daughter — (such a case
Will do as well as any) — ask'd of you
To smuggle him, his letters, or himself,
Into that neighbour's house, there secretly
To ply a stolen love; what would you do?

Ped. Do it of course!

Juan. Why not?

Fel. Well, I would not:

Ped. But why?

Fel. Because, however it turn'd out,
I must do ill; if one friend's love succeeded
I had play'd traitor to the other still;

Digitized by Google

If unsuccessful, not that cost alone,
But also, without counter-profiting
Him whom I sacrific'd so much to serve.
Ped. If that be your determination,
I have no more to say. [*Exit.*
Juan. Nor I: farewell;
I must find other means. [*Exit.*
Fel. Of all the plagues,
For one with no love profit of his own
Thus to be pester'd with two lovers' pains!
And yet, what, after all, between the two —
Between the *three*, perhaps, am I to do?
'Fore Heav'n, I think, 't will be the only way
To get her to untie who drew the knot;
No woman ever at a loss
To mend or mar a matter as she wills.
Yet 't is an awkward thing to ask a lady,
"Pray, madam, which of these two sighing swains
"Like you the best? or both? or neither, madam?"
Were not a letter best? But then who take it?
Since to commit her letter, would so far
Commit her honour to another's hands?
By Heav'n, I think I 've nothing left to do,
But ev'n to write it, and to take it too;
A ticklish business — but may fair intent
And prudent conduct lead to good event!
[*Exit.*

Digitized by Google

SCENE III. *An Apartment in* DON ALONSO'S *House.*—*Enter* CLARA, EUGENIA, MARI NUÑO, &c.

Clara. Here, take my mantle, Mari. Oh, I wish we had a chaplain of our own in the house, not to go abroad through the crowded streets!

Eug. And I, that church were a league of crowded street off, and we obliged to go to it daily.

Mari. I agree with Señora Clara.

Brigida. And I with Señora Eugenia.

Mari. And why, pray? [sheep's eyes.

Brig. Oh, madam, I know who it is deals most in

Enter DON ALONSO.

Alon. (talking to himself as he enters). How lucky he should have pitcht on the very one I wanted! *(Aloud.)* Oh, Eugenia, I would speak with you. Nay, retire not, Clara, for I want you to pardon me for the very thing Eugenia is to thank me for.

Clara. A riddle, sir. I pardon you?

Alon. Listen, both of you. Your cousin Don Torribio has declared his love for Eugenia: and though I could have wish'd to marry you, Clara, first, and to the head of our house too, yet my regret at your missing it is almost cancell'd by the joy of your sister's acceptance.

Clara. And so with me, believe me, sir. I am well content to be slighted so long as she is happy: which

Digitized by Google

may she be with my cousin these thousand years to come. *(Aside.)* Oh, providential rejection! [*Exit.*

Torribio (peeping in). Ah! what a wry face she makes!

Alon. And you, Eugenia, what say you?

Eug. (aside). Alas! surprise on surprise! *(Aloud.)* Nay, sir, you know, I hope, that I am ever ready to obey you.

Alon. I look'd for nothing else of you.

Torr. Nor I.

Alon. Your cousin is waiting your answer in his chamber. I will tell him the good news, and bring him to you. [*Exit.*

Eug. Only let him come! Alas!

Torr. (entering). How lightly steps a favour'd lover forth! Give you joy, cousin.

Eug. The wretch!

Torr. Being selected by the head of your house.

Eug. Sir, one word; I would n't marry you if it should cost me my life.

Torr. Ah, you are witty, cousin, I know.

Eug. Not to you, sir. And now especially, I mean to tell you sober truth, and abide by it, so you had better listen. I tell you once again, and once for all, I would n't marry you to save my life!

Torr. Cousin! After what I heard you tell your father?

Digitized by Google

Eug. What I said then was out of duty to him; and what I now say is out of detestation of you.

Torr. I 'll go and tell him this, I declare I will.

Eug. Do, and I 'll deny it. But I mean it all the same, and swear it.

Torr. Woman, am I not your cousin?

Eug. Yes.

Torr. And head of the family?

Eug. I dare say.

Torr. An Hidalgo?

Eug. Yes.

Torr. Young?

Eug. Yes.

Torr. Gallant?

Eug. Very.

Torr. And dispos'd to you?

Eug. Very possibly.

Torr. What do you mean then?

Eug. Whatever you choose, so long as you believe I mean what I say. I 'll never marry you. You might be all you say, and fifty other things beside, but I 'll never marry any man without a capacity.

[*Exit.*

Torr. Capacity! without a Capacity! I who have the family estate, and my ancestors painted in a row on the patent in my saddle-bags! I who —

Digitized by Google

Enter ALONSO.

Alon. Well, nephew, here you are at last; I 've been hunting every where to tell you the good news.

Torr. And what may that be, pray?

Alon. That your cousin Eugenia cordially accepts your offer, and —

Torr. Oh, indeed, does she so? I tell you she 's a very odd way of doing it then. Oh uncle, she has said that to me I would n't say to my gelding.

Alon. To you? [now.

Torr. Ay, to me — here — on this very spot — just

Alon. But what?

Torr. What? why, that I had no Capacity! But I 'll soon settle that; I either have a Capacity or not — if I have, she lies; if not, I desire you to buy me one directly,

Alon. What infatuation! [whatever it may cost.

Torr. What, it costs so much, does it? I don't care, I 'll not have it thrown in my teeth by her or any other woman; and if you won't, I 'll go and buy a Capacity, and bring it back with me, let it cost — ay, and weigh — what it will. [*Exit.*

Alon. Nephew, nephew! Stop him there!

Enter CLARA *and* EUGENIA.

Clara. What is the matter, sir? [to your cousin?

Alon. Oh, graceless girl, what have you been saying

Eug. I, sir? Nothing.

Digitized by Google

Alon. Oh! if you deceive me! But I must first stop his running after a Capacity!

Eug. What can I have done?

Clara. Nay, attempt not dissimulation with me, who know how you would risk even your advancement for a sarcasm.

Eug. It was all for your sake, if I did, Clara.

Clara. For my sake! oh, indeed, you think I can have no lovers but what you reject? Poor little fool! I could have enough if I chose to lay out for them as some do; but many will pluck at an apple who will retire from a fortress.

Eug. Hark! they are coming back; I dare not face them both as yet. [*Exit.*

Enter DON FELIX.

Fel. Permit me, madam —

Clara. Who is this?

Fel. One, madam,
Who dares to ask one word with you.

Clara. With me?

Fel. Indeed with you.

Clara. You cannot, sir, mean me.

Fel. Once more, and once for all, with you indeed;
Let me presume to say so, knowing well
I say so in respect, not in presumption. [with her?

Eug. (peeping). Why, whom has my staid sister got

Digitized by Google

Clara. With me! My very silence and surprise
Bid you retire at once.
Fel. Which I will do
When you will let this silence speak to you
With less offence perhaps than could my tongue.
(Offering her a letter.)
Eug. Oh, if he would but try if fort or apple!
Clara. A letter too! — for me!
Fel. And, madam, one
It most imports your honour you should read.
For, that being once in question, I make light
That my friends' lives, Don Juan and Don Pedro,
Are in the balance too.
Eug. Don Juan! Don Pedro!
Clara. What, sir, is this to me, who neither know
Don Juan, nor Don Pedro, nor yourself?
Fel. Having then done my duty to my friends,
And (once again I say 't) to yourself, madam,
Albeit in vain — I 'll not offend you more
By my vain presence. *(Going.)*
Clara. Nay, a moment — wait.
I must clear up this mystery. Indeed,
I would not be discourteous or ungrateful:
But ere I thank you for your courtesy,
Know you to whom you do it?
Fel. To Donna Eugenia.
Clara. Well, sir?

Digitized by Google

Eug. Oh, the hypocrite!

Fel. You are the lady?

Clara. Enough — give me the letter, and adieu.

Eug. I can forbear no longer. *(Coming out.)* Sister, stop!

Oh! what to do!— the letter —

Clara. Well?

Eug. I tell you

My father and my cousin are coming up,

And if they see —

Clara. Well, if they see! what then?

I wish them both to see and hear it all.

(Calling.) Sir! Father! Cousin! Otañez!

Alon. (within). Clara's voice?

Fel. What to do now?

Eug. Alas, to tell the truth,

When I but wish'd to lie!

Clara (calling). This way, sir, here!

Eug. Will you expose us both? In here! in here!

[*She hides* FELIX *behind arras.*

Enter ALONSO, TORRIBIO, MARI NUÑO, OTAÑEZ, *&c.*

Alon. What is the matter?

Clara. There is some one in the house, sir. A man — I saw him stealing along the corridor, towards the garret.

Brig. It must be a robber!

Digitized by Google

Alon. A robber?

Mari. What more likely in a rich Indian's house?

Alon. I 'll search the house.

Torr. I 'll lead the forlorn hope, though that garret were Maestricht itself. Now, cousin, you shall see if I 've a Capacity or not.

[*Exeunt* ALONSO *and the men.*

Clara. Do you two watch in the passage. [*Exeunt* MARI NUÑO *and* BRIGIDA.] And now, sir, the door is open, give me the letter and begone.

Fel. Adieu, madam, neglect not its advice.

Eug. Alas, alas, she has it! [shame

Fel. She 's all too fair! come, honour, come, and False love from poaching upon friendship's game!

[*Exit.*

Re-enter ALONSO, *&c.*

Alon. We can see nothing of him, daughter.

Clara. Nay, sir, he probably made off when the alarm was given. Take no more trouble.

Alon. Nay, we 'll search the whole house.

Torr. What do you say to my Capacity now, cousin?

[*Exeunt* ALONSO, TORRIBIO, *&c.*

Clara. You see, Eugenia, in what your enterprises end. At the first crack, you faint and surrender. I have done all this to show you the difference between talking and doing. And now go; I have got the letter, and want to read it.

Digitized by Google

Eug. And so do I! but —

Clara. Go! I am mistress now. *(Exit* EUGENIA.) May they not have written to me under cover of her name? let me see. *(Reads.)* "Let not him offend honour by the very means he takes to secure it; at least let his good intention excuse his ill seeming. Don Juan, more than ever enamoured of you, hangs about your doors; Don Pedro follows every step you take; they are both in my house; it is impossible but the secret must soon escape both, who must then refer their rivalry to the sword, and all to the scandal of your name. You can, by simply disowning both, secure their lives, your own reputation, and my peace of mind as their friend and host. Adieu!"

Oh what perplexing thoughts this little letter
Buzzes about my brain, both what it says,
And leaves unsaid! — oh, can it be for me?
And is the quiet nun really belov'd
Under the cover of an idle flirt?
Or is it but for her — the vain, pert thing,
Who thinks her eye slays all it looks upon?
If it be so, and she, not I, is lov'd,
I yet may be reveng'd —

Eug. (entering). On whom?

Clara. Eugenia!

This letter that has fallen to my hands,
But meant for you —

Digitized by Google

Eug. Oh, I know all about it.

Clara. Know all about it! know then that two men
Are even now following your steps like dogs
To tear your reputation between them,
And then each other for that worthless sake,
And yet —

Eug. A moment, you shall see at once
How easily I shall secure myself,
And them, and supersede your kind intentions.
Signor Don Pedro! *(Calls at the window.)*

Clara. What are you about!

Eug. Listen, and you will hear.

Clara. You dare not do it!

Eug. My father 's safely lockt up in his room,
(Thanks to the gout your false alarm has brought,)
My cousin gone to buy capacities,
And now 's my time. *(Calling at the window.)*
Don Pedro! Signor Don Pedro!

Ped. (coming below to the window).
He well may wait to have his name thrice call'd
When such a goddess —

Eug. Listen, sir, to me.
It is because, I say, *because* this room,
Away from father's and duenna's ears,
Allows some harmless speech, it also bars
All nearer access than the ears and eyes
Of father or duenna both could do.

Digitized by Google

But, seeing harm of harmless trifling come,
I now entreat, implore, command you, sir,
To leave this window and my threshold clear,
Now and for ever!

Ped. Hear me —

Eug. Pardon me,
I cannot.

Ped. But this once —

Eug. If you persist
I must be rude.

Ped. Oh, how do worse than —

Eug. (shutting the blinds down). Thus!

Clara. And to your other gallant?

Eug. Why not think,
If he were here, I 'd do the same to him?
Oh, Clara, be assur'd my levities
Are but the dust on youth's butterfly wing,
Though prudes and sinners too take fright at them;
Like that benighted traveller, you know,
Who, frighted by a shallow brook that jump'd
And bubbled at his right, swerv'd to the left
And tumbled into one that lay quite still,
But deep enough to drown him for his pains. [*Exit.*

Clara. What, did she hear what to myself I said?
Or saw my colour change from white to red?
Or only guess'd me waiting for the prey

Digitized by Google

Her idle chatter ought to fright away ?
If chance have done more than all prudence could,
Prudence at least may make occasion good ;
And if these lovers by mistake should woo,
Why (by mistake) should I not listen too ?
And teach the teacher, to her proper cost,
Those waters are least deep that prattle most.

ACT III.

SCENE I. *Room in* ALONSO'S *House.*—CLARA *and* MARI NUÑO.

Clara. IT is so, indeed.

Mari. You know you can always rely on my old love to you. But indeed I cannot but wonder at your sister's forwardness.

Clara. Yes; to think of two cavaliers after her at once ! I look upon it as my duty to set all to right; to do this I must once more speak to him who warned me of it; and I want you to give him this letter — in *her* name, remember — this will bring him here to-night, and I shall undeceive him for ever. But hark ! some one —

Digitized by Google

TORRIBIO *is about to enter.*

Mari. 'T is that wretch. Stay, sir, no man comes in here.

Torr. Away, troublesome duenna.

Mari. It 's not decent, I tell you.

Torr. An't my cousin decent; and an't I?

Clara. What is the matter?

Torr. This old woman won't let me come in.

Clara. She is right, unless my father be with you.

Torr. Oh, I understand —

Those that are out
Still will pout.

Clara. Well, since she who is in, and may grin, is not here, you have no business neither. For me, what grudge I have against you, be assur'd I can and will repay. Mari, remember. [*Exit.*

Mari. Hark! some one at the door. [*Exit.*

Torr. By heav'n and earth, I do begin suspect!
I say again I do begin suspect —
And valour rises with suspicion —
I shall ere long be very terrible.
Ancestors! Saddle-bags! Capacities!
For passing through the house — let me not say it!
Till I have told my tongue it lies to say it —
In passing through the passage, what saw I
Within Eugenia's room, behind her bed!
I saw — *(Re-enter* MARI NUÑO *with a letter.)*

Digitized by Google

Mari. A letter, madam,— Where is she?

Torr. Woman, she was, but is not. A letter too? Give it me.

Mari. You too!

Torr. Give it me, or dread
My dreadful vengeance on your wither'd head.

Mari. Leave hold of it.—

Torr. I 'll not! The more you pull, The more —

Mari. Then take that on your empty skull!
(Deals him a blow, and calls.)
Help! Help!

Torr. You crying, when two teeth are out —

Mari. "As swelling prologues of"—Help! murder! murder!

Enter EUGENIA, CLARA, ALONSO, BRIGIDA, *&c.*

Alon. What is the matter now?

Mari. Don Torribio, sir, because I would n't let him have my young lady's letter, has laid violent hands on me.

Torr. I?

All. Don Torribio!

Torr. I tell you —

Alon. Indeed, nephew, your choleric jealousy carries you too far. A respectable female in my house!

Torr. I tell you that it is *me* who —

Digitized by Google

Alon. I know — enough — make not the matter worse by worse excuses. Give me the letter has been the cause of such unseemly conduct.

Eug. (aside). If it should be from one of them!

Clara (aside to EUGENIA). Nothing I hope from your gallants.

Alon. (reads). "My dear nieces, this being the day of the Queen's public entry, I have engag'd a balcony, and will send my coach for you directly to come and see it with me." This, you see, nephew, is all your suspicions amount to! My cousin, Donna Violante, inviting my daughters to witness this august ceremony! If you still suspect; here, take it, and read it for yourself.

Torr. (after looking at the letter). I tell you what, uncle, if they wait till I 've read it, they 'll not see the sight at all.

Alon. Why so?

Torr. Because I can't read.

Alon. That this should be!

Torr. But that 's no matter neither. They can teach me before they go.

Alon. What, when it 's to-day? almost directly?

Torr. Can't it be put off?

Alon. 'T is useless saying more. Daughters, such a ceremony happens, perhaps, but once in a life; you must see it. On with your mantles, whether Don

Digitized by Google

Torribio approve or not. I am lame, you see, and must keep at home; to hear about it all from you on your return.

Clara. At your pleasure, sir.

Eug. Shall I stay with you, sir, while Clara —

Alon. No, no. Both of you go.

Clara. (aside to MARI, *while putting on her mantle.)* Remember the letter!

Mari. Trust to me.

Eug. (aside). I wonder if they will be there!

[*Exeunt all but* TORRIBIO.

Torr. Whether the Queen enter to-day,
To-morrow, or keep quite away,
Let those go see who have a mind;
I am resolved to stay behind:
And now all gone, and coast quite clear,
Clear up the secret I suspect and fear. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *A Room in* FELIX'S *House.*— FELIX *and* HERNANDO.

Hern. Not going to see the Entry, sir?

Fel. What use going to a festival if one has no spirits for it?

Hern. Humph, what makes you out of spirits?

Fel. Why should you ask?

Hern. Nay, then, you have already answered me. You are in love.

Digitized by Google

Fel. I scarce know whether you are right or wrong, Hernando. I have indeed seen a lady whose very beauty forbids all hope of my attaining it.

Hern. How so, sir?

Fel. She who has enslav'd Don Juan and Don Pedro has fetter'd me, at last! I should care little for their rivalry, had not each made me keeper of his love, so that — Hark!

Mari Nuño (within). Don Felix!

Fel. Who is that?

Hern. Some one calling you.

Mari (within). Señor Don Felix!

Fel. Well?

Mari (within). From Donna Eugenia!

[*A letter is thrown in at the window.*

Fel. From Eugenia! *(Reads.)* "Grateful to you for your advice, I have already begun to follow it; but, in order to that, I must see you once again this evening! Adieu!" Here is a dilemma! For if —

Hern. Don Juan!

Enter JUAN.

Juan (aside). What was that?

Fel. Don Juan back,
When such a festival —

Juan. And you? Oh, Felix,
I know not how to speak or hold my tongue!

Digitized by Google

Fel. A riddle! How is that?
Juan. Why, if I speak
I needs must anger you; if not, myself.
Fel. I do not understand it yet.
Juan. Nor I;
Yet if you give me leave (as leave they give
To children and to fools to say their mind)
I 'll say mine.
Fel. Surely say it.
Juan. Tell me then —
That letter I saw flying in at the window
As I came up, what was it?
Fel. That of all
That you could ask, Juan, I cannot answer —
Must not — relying on our old regard
For fair construction.
Juan. I believe it, Felix:
Yet seeing that you first excus'd yourself
From helping on my suit, upon the score
Of other obligation; and that now,
Ev'n now, but a few wretched minutes back,
Eugenia herself, in the public street,
Forbad me from her carriage angrily
From following her more — What can I think
But that she loves another? when besides,
Coming back suddenly, I hear her name
Whisper'd — oh, what so loud as an ill whisper! —

Digitized by Google

By you, and see a letter too thrown in,
Which on my coming up confus'd you hide,
And will not say from whom — I say, Don Felix,
What can I think?

Fel. (aside). And I, what can I do?
Who, even if I may excuse myself,
Must needs embroil Don Pedro!

Juan. Answer me.

Fel. Have I not answered you sufficiently,
In saying that my old and well-tried love
Should well excuse my silence?

Juan. I confess
Your love, old and well tried as you profess;
And on that very score ask of you, Felix,
What you would do if one as true and tried
In a like case seal'd up his lips to you?

Fel. Leave them unlockt in fullest confidence.

Juan. Alas! how much, much easier to give
Than follow ev'n the counsel one implores!
Felix, in pity I entreat of you,
Show me that letter!

Fel. Gladly should you see it
If no one but myself were implicate.

Juan. There *is* then some one else?

Fel. There is.

Juan. Who else?

Fel. That 's what I cannot tell you.

Digitized by Google

Juan. Dare not trust
A friend as true to you as you to him?
Fel. In anything but this.
Juan. What can this do
But aggravate my worst suspicions?
Fel. I cannot help it.
Juan. I must tell you then
My friendship for you, Felix, may defer,
But not forego, the reading of that letter.
Fel. I am sorry, sir, your friendship must abide
In ignorance till doomsday.
Juan. You 'll not show it?
Fel. No, never.
Juan. Follow me, sir.
Fel. Where you please.

As they are going out, enter PEDRO.

Ped. How now? Don Juan and Felix quarrelling?
Fel. Nay, only walking out.
Ped. What, walking out,
With hands upon your swords and inflam'd faces?
You shall not go.
Hern. That 's right, sir, keep them back,
They were about —
Fel. Peace, rascal!
Ped. Friends may quarrel,
But surely not to such extremity

Digitized by Google

But that a third may piece the quarrel up
Without the sword. The cause of your dispute?
Fel. I must be silent.
Juan. And so must not I;
Who will not have it thought
That I forgot my manners as a guest
For any idle reason. You, Don Pedro,
Though lately known to me, are a gentleman,
And you shall hear my story.
Fel. Not a word,
Or else—
Ped. Nay, Felix—
Juan. I will speak it out!
Don Pedro, I confided to Don Felix,
My friend and host, the love I long have borne
For one with whom he could advance my suit,
And promis'd so to do it; but instead,
Yea, under the very mask of doing it,
Has urg'd his own; has even now receiv'd
A letter through that ready window thrown,
He dares not show me; and to make all sure,
I heard him whispering as I came upstairs,
The very name of my Eugenia—
Ped. Hold!
This is my quarrel.
He who pretends to love Eugenia
Must answer it to me.

Digitized by Google

Juan. Two rivals, then!

Fel. Two enemies grown out of two old friends
By the very means I us'd to keep them so!

Juan. Keep them, indeed!

Ped. When with base treachery —

Juan. Hypocrisy —

Ped. Under the name of friend —

Juan. A pretty friend —

Ped. You robb'd me —

Juan (turning to PEDRO). You! Dare *you*
Pretend —

Ped. (to JUAN). Dare *I!* Dare *you*, sir?

Fel. Peace, I say.
And hear me speak!

Juan (to FELIX). The time is past for that.
Follow me, sir.

Ped. No, *me.*

Fel. One, or the other, or together both,
I 'll either lead or follow, nothing loath!

[*Exeunt wrangling.*

SCENE III. ALONSO *sitting.*—*Enter* TORRIBIO.

Torr. Oh, uncle!

Alon. Well, what now?

Torr. Oh, such a thing! I suspected it!

Alon. Well, tell me.

Torr. Such a thing!

Digitized by Google

Alon. Speak, man.

Torr. When we were searching the house for the man cousin Clara told us of —

Alon. Well?

Torr. Passing by cousin Eugenia's room, I saw — I have not breath to say it!

Alon. Speak, sir.

Torr. Those men in the house — those dandies about the door — I know how they get in now — when I found in my cousin's room — behind her very bed —

Alon. Don Torribio!

Torr. The very ladder they climb up by!

Alon. A ladder? [cord.

Torr. Ah, and a very strong one too, all of iron and

Alon. If this were true —

Torr. Wait till I show it you, then. [*Exit.*

Alon. Not in vain did Mari Nuño warn me of her dangerous disposition! If he have such a proof of her incontinence how will he marry her?

Re-enter TORRIBIO *with a fardingale.*

Torr. There, uncle, there it is, hoops, and steps,

Alon. This a ladder? [and all!

Torr. Ah, that, if it were all let out, would scale the tower of Babel, I believe.

Alon. I can scarce control my rage. Fool! this is a fardingale, not a ladder.

Digitized by Google

Torr. A what-ingale?

Alon. A fardingale, fool![1]

Torr. Why, that 's worse than the ladder!

Alon. You will fairly drive me out of my senses! Go, sir, directly, and put it back where you took it from, and for Heaven's sake, no more of such folly!

[*Exit.*

Torr. Well — to think of this! and my cousin that look'd so nice too!

Voices (within). Coach there! coach!

Enter MARI NUÑO.

Mari. They are come back. I must get lights. Who 's this?

Torr. Nobody.

Mari. What are you doing with that fardingale; and where did you get it?

[1] "A hoop of whalebone, used to spread out the petticoat to a wide circumference"; — Johnson; who one almost wonders did not spread out into a wider circumference of definition about the "*poore verdingales*," that (according to Heywood)

——— "must lie in the streete,
To have them no doore in the citye made meete."

The Spanish name is "guarda infanta," which puzzles Don Torribio, as to what his cousin had to do with infants. Our word was first (as Heywood writes) *verdingale*: which, as Johnson tells us, "much exercised the etymology of Skinner, who at last seems to determine that it is derived from *vertu garde*." This, however, Johnson thinks, does not at all get to the bottom of the etymology, which may, he says, be found in Dutch. Perhaps the old French *petenlair* was of the same kindred.

Digitized by Google

Torr. Nothing, and nowhere.

Mari. Come, give it me at once, lest I give you the fellow of the cuff I gave you before.

Torr. For fear of which, take that upon your wrinkled chaps. *(Strikes her, and calls out.)* Help! help! Murder! murder! Help!

Enter ALONSO, CLARA, EUGENIA, *&c., in mantles.*

Alon. What now?

Torr. Mari Nuño there, only because I wish'd her good night, laid violent hands on me.

Mari. Oh the wretch! he wanted to make love to me — and worse — declaring he would none of any who used such a thing as this. *(Showing fardingale.)*

Alon. Let us hear no more of such folly. There is something else to-day to tell of. Well, *(to his daughters,)* you have seen this procession?

Eug. Ay, sir; the greatest sight, I believe, that Spain has seen since she was greatest of nations.

Alon. I, who could not go myself, am to see it, you know, in your recital.

Eug. As best we can, sir. [Felix?

Clara (aside to MARI NUÑO). Have you seen Don

Mari (aside). Enough, he will be here. But when?

Clara. When the story is done, and all weary are gone to bed.

Mari. Good. [*Exit; the rest sit down.*

Digitized by Google

Clara. Begin you then, Eugenia, I will chime in.

Eug. This being the long-expected day
When our fair Spain and fairest Mariana
Should quicken longing hope to perfect joy,
Madrid awoke, and dress'd her squares and streets
In all their glory; through all which we pass'd
Up to the Prado, where the city's self,
In white and pearl array'd, by ancient usage,
Waited in person to receive the bride
By a triumphal arch that rose heaven-high,
The first of four all nam'd and hung about
With emblems of the four parts of the world,
(Each with a separate element distinct,)
Of which our sovereign lord was now to lay
The four crowns at his sovereign lady's feet.

Clara. And this first arch was Europe; typified
By the wide Air, which temperatest she breathes,
And which again, for double cognisance,
Wore the imperial eagle for its crest;
With many another airy symbol more,
And living statues supplementary
Of Leon and Castile, each with its crown,
Austria, the cradle of the royal bride,
And Rome, the mistress of the faith of all.

Eug. Here then, when done the customary rite
Of kissing hands and due obeisance,
Drum, trumpet, and artillery thundering,

Digitized by Google

With that yet lordliest salute of all,
A people's universal acclamation;
(And never in the world were subjects yet
So proud, and bow'd, and with so good a cause;)
Under a golden canopy she mov'd
Tow'rd San Geronimo, whose second arch,
Of no less altitude and magnificence,
Deckt with the sixty crowns of Asia,
Receiv'd her next, wearing for cognisance
Earth, of which Asia is the largest piece;
Which Earth again carried a lion's mane,
As proclamation of her noblest growth.

Clara. Thence passing on, came to where Africa,
Her waste of arid desert embleming
By Fire, whose incarnation, the Sun,
Burn'd on this arch as in his house in heaven,
Bore record of the trophies two great Queens
Upon the torrid continent had won,
Who, one with holy policy at home,
The other in Granada by the sword,
Extirpated deadly Mahometism.

Eug. Last, to the Holy Virgin dedicate,
From whose cathedral by the holy choir
Chaunted Te Deum, rose in splendid arch
America, wearing for her device
The silver image of the Ocean,
That roll'd the holy cross to the New World.

Digitized by Google

And so all pass'd to the Escurial,
In front of which, in two triumphal cars,
Two living statues were — one Mercury,
Who, as divine ambassador, thus far
Had brought the royal bride propitiously;
The other, Hymen, who took up the charge
Mercury left, and with unquenching torch,
While cannon, trumpet, choir, and people's voice
Thunder'd her praises, took the palfrey's rein,
Who gloried in the beauty that he bore,
And brought and left her at her palace door.

Alon. Well done, well done, both of you, in whose lively antiphony I have seen it all as well as if I had been there.

Torr. Well, for my part I neither wanted to see it nor hear of it.

Alon. No? why so, nephew?

Torr. Lord, I 've seen twice as good as that down in my country many a time, all the boys and girls dancing, and the mayor, and the priest, and —

Alon. Peace, peace. Come, Brigida, light me to my room, I am sleepy.

Eug. And I; with sight-seeing, and sight-telling, I suppose. *(Aside.)* And with a heavy heart, alas!

[*Exeunt* ALONSO, EUGENIA, *and* BRIGIDA.

Clara. Will not you to bed too, sir?

Digitized by Google

Torr. Not till I 've had my supper, I promise you. Oh, I don't care for all your sour looks, not I, nor your threats of revenge neither.

Clara. You don't?

Torr. No, I defy you.

Clara. Not if I were to prove to you that she you slighted me for loves another?

Torr. Oh, cousin Clara!

Clara. Shall I prove it to you?

Torr. Oh, if my ancestors could hear this, what would they say?

Clara. I don't know. But you may hear if you like what she says to your rival.

Torr. Ha!

Clara. Go into this balcony, and you will hear her talking to him in the street.

Torr. I knew! I guess'd! the ladder!

(He goes into the balcony and she shuts him in.)

Clara. There cool yourself in the night till I let you out. And now to have *you* safe too. *(Locks* EUGENIA'S *door.)* And now, all safe, for the first time in my life Love and I meet in fair field. Mari Nuño! *(Enter* MARI.) Where is the Cavalier?

Mari. Waiting in my chamber.

Clara. Bring him. You understand it is all for Eugenia's good?

Mari. I understand. [*Exit, and returns with* FELIX.

Digitized by Google

Fel. I fly, madam, to your feet. *(Kneels.)*

Clara. Rise, sir, 't is about your letter I sent to you.

Fel. Alas, madam, all is worse than ever!

Clara. What has happened?

Fel. Not only did my two friends fall out with each other, as I expected, but with me for the very good services I was doing them; insulted me till I could withhold my sword no longer; we went out to fight; were seen, pursued, and disperst by the alguazils. I return'd home to await them, but as yet know nothing more of them.

Clara. Alas, sir, what do I not owe you for your care on my behalf?

Fel. More perhaps than you imagine.

Clara. Tell me all at least, that I may at least know my debt, if unable to repay it.

Fel. Alas, I dare not say what is said in not saying.

Clara. Said, and not said? I do not understand!

Fel. I, alas, too well!

Clara. Explain to me then, sir.

Fel. No, madam. If what I feel is so much on my friends' account, it is still more for their sakes that I keep it unsaid.

Clara. Hark! what noise is that? Mari Nuño, what is the matter?

Digitized by Google

Enter MARI NUÑO.

Mari. Oh, madam, some one is getting over the garden wall! Your father has heard the noise; and is got up with his sword.

Clara. If he should find you!

Fel. He need not. This balcony —

Clara. No, no!

Torribio (within). Thieves! Murder! Help!

(He opens the balcony; TORRIBIO *falls forward on him, push'd in by* JUAN *with his sword drawn.)*

Torr. Murder! Murder!
Juan (to FELIX). Thou too here, traitor!
Fel. (drawing his sword). Who are these?
} *All at once.*

(Confusion, in which enter ALONSO *with drawn sword,* OTAÑEZ, BRIGIDA, *&c.)*

Alon. Two! Torribio, to my side.

Fel. Wait! wait! Let me explain.

Alon. Don Felix!

Fel. Listen to me, all of you, I say! I was sent for to prevent, not to do, mischief, by Donna Eugenia herself —

Enter EUGENIA.

Eug. By *me*, sir!

Clara. Hold, hold, Eugenia.

Eug. I will not hold when my name is in question without my — Sent for by me, sir!

Digitized by Google

Fel. Not by you, madam; by Donna Eugenia, *(pointing to* CLARA,) to prevent —

Alon. and Eug. Clara!

Torr. Ah, 't was she put me to freeze in the balcony, too.

Clara (to FELIX). Sir, you come here to save another from peril. Leave me not in it.

Fel. I leave you, madam, who would lay down my life for you! and all the rather if you are *not* Donna Eugenia.

Alon. None but her father or her husband must do that.

Fel. Then let me claim to do it as the latter. *(Kneels to* CLARA.)

Alon. But, Clara?

Clara. Sir, I am ready to obey my father — and my husband.

Eug. And I, sir. And to prove my duty, let me marry my cousin at once, and retire with him to the mountains.

Torr. Marry me! No, indeed! No Capacities, and ladders, and — what-d'ye-call-'ems — for me. I 'll e'en go back as I came, with my ancestors safe in my saddle-bags, I will.

Juan (to ALONSO). Permit me, sir. I am Don Juan de Mendoza; a name at least not unknown to you. I have loved your daughter long; and might

Digitized by Google

have had perchance favorable acceptation from her mother long ago, had not you yourself been abroad at the time.

Alon. I now remember to have heard something of the kind. What say you, Eugenia?

Eug. I am ready to obey my father — and my husband.

With which at last our comedy shall close,
Asking indulgence both of friends and foes.

Clara. And ere we part our text for envoy give,—
Beware of all smooth waters while you live!

This Comedy seems an Occasional Piece to celebrate the marriage of Philip IV. with Anna Maria of Austria, and the pageants that Calderon himself was summoned to devise and manage. This marriage was in 1649; when Calderon, as old as the century, was in his prime: and I think the airy lightness of the dialogue, the play of character, the easy intrigue, and the happily introduced wedding rhapsodies, make it one of the most agreeable of his comedies.

As I purposely reduced the swell of Isabel's speech in the last play, I must confess that the present version of these wedding pageants, though not unauthorized by the original, had perhaps better have been taken in a lighter tone to chime in with so much common dialogue. But they were done first, to see what could be made of them: and, as little dramatic interest is concerned, are left as they were; at least not the less like so much in Calderon, where love and loyalty are concerned; and to be excused by the reader as speeches *spouted* by boys on holiday occasions.

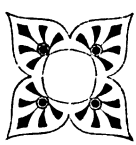
THE END.

Digitized by Google

ERRATA.

Page	*Line*	
114,	8,	*read a comma after* slay
152,	18,	*for* men *read* man
193,	8,	*for* living quiver *read* ridge of spears
223,	26,	*for* Don Luis *read* Don Diego
277,	20,	*for* return *read* returns
280,	19,	*for* their very house *read* this very house
295,	9,	*for* fifth *read* fourth

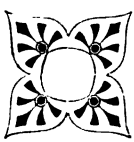
Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

SUFFOLK SEA PHRASES.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

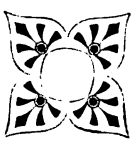
SEA WORDS AND PHRASES

USED ALONG THE

SUFFOLK COAST

COLLECTED AND ELUCIDATED.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

SEA WORDS AND PHRASES ALONG THE SUFFOLK COAST.

To the Editor of the East Anglian.

MY DEAR SIR: You have asked me to send you some of the Sea Phrases I have picked up along our Suffolk coast — from Yarmouth to Harwich — and here they are.

Certainly, the only two East Anglian Vocabularies we had till within the last two years were deficient in this respect; and a considerable deficiency one must reckon it, considering how much of the country whose phraseology they undertake to register, is sea-board. But Major Moor, though born at Alderton, only two miles from the waves, went out to India as soon as he was in his teens; and, when at length returned to settle in England, occupied himself with an inland though not far inland farm, for the remainder of his wise, beneficent, and delightful life. Forby was busy with a parish near Downham Market; and though both might, under certain conditions, have almost heard the sea that washes their coasts, they neglected the language of its people for that of those "whose talk is of bullocks."

I had for some time meditated a fusion of their two Glossaries, taking the more accurate Forby for groundwork, to be illustrated with Major Moor's delightful Suffolk Humour, and adding the Sea Phrases in which they both are wanting. Two years ago, however, Mr. Nall in some measure anticipated my dread exploit by the very good East Anglian Vocabulary which he appended to his Yarmouth Guide;

Digitized by Google

bringing to his task a great deal of etymological research, such as the march of philology has made much easier since Forby's time, but such as I could make no pretensions to. I had, however, been more among the sailors, if not among the philologists, than Mr. Nall; and, being very glad of his book, sent him the words I now send you, to be incorporated, if he saw good, in any future edition of his book. He thanked me courteously, and since then I have heard no more of him.

Meanwhile, you think these words of mine may find a proper niche in your *East Anglian;* and you are very welcome to them. Picked up idly, with little care how or whence they came to hand, I doubt they will make a sorry show in your grave pages, whether as regards quantity or quality. They may, however, amuse some of your readers, and perhaps interest others in guessing at their history. On the whole, I think if you print them as I send them, it must be in some Christmas number, a season when even antiquaries grow young, scholars unbend, and grave men are content to let others trifle. Even *Notes and Queries*, with all the scholars that Bruce so long has led, sometimes smile, sometimes doze, and usually gossip about what is now the fashion to call Folk-lore (of which I send you some also) at Christmas. And so, wishing you, at any rate, a happy one, I remain, yours very sincerely, E. F. G.

P. S. I add a little incidental gossip at the end, in order to make up one number all of a piece, if you think your subscribers won't drop off in consequence.

ARMSTRONG. Arm in arm, "they came hallorin' down the street *armstrong.*"

A good word surely.

BARK. "The surf *bark* from the Nor'ard"; or, as was otherwise said to me, "the sea aint lost his woice from the Nor'ard yet," a sign, by the way, that the wind is to come from that quarter.

Digitized by Google

A poetical word, such as those whose business is with the sea are apt to use. Listening one night to the sea some way inland, a sailor said to me, "Yes, sir, the sea roar for the loss of the wind"; which a landsman properly interpreted as only meaning that the sea made itself heard when the wind had subsided.

BARM-SKIN. The oil skin, or "*oily*," which covers the fisherman's *berm* or bosom, and reaches to the "*petticoats*" of the same material, covering the lower man.

BEAM. The back-bone of the trawl net.

BECKET. A sheath; knife-becket. [Aldbro' I think.]

BEGGAR'S OPERA. A hostelry for tramps, &c.

BETE. To mend nets; the original A. S. of our "*better*."

Till aware of this, one is puzzled at the praise of some good housewife that "she 's a capital hand at *beatin'*." "*Bet-ups*" are the nets so mended, and one constantly reads printed advertisements of so many new nets and so many *bet-ups* for sale.

BETTY. To be over nice in putting things to order. "He go betty, betty, bettyin' about the boat like an old woman."

BLACK HOGS. "The night 's as dark as black hogs."

BLACK MEAT. Cured bacon.

BLARE. A mixture of pitch and tar.

BLOWFISH. Often met with by North Sea herring men; they tell me it is the whale. (Query?)

BOTTOM 'S OUT. The bottom of the sea when beyond reach of the lead.

BOWLS. Small barrels that serve as buoys to the warp which sustains the fleet of nets. These bowls are painted of different colours, to distinguish the different lengths of each fleet.

Digitized by Google

BOWS. Pronounced as *bose* (but query *bowze?*), beer.

So at least in the following inventory, which I am told comprises a fair fisherman's breakfast "a pint of bows, a penny buster (*sc.*, burster, a penny loaf), a bit of kessen (cheese), a stinger (onion), and a pinch of tomtartarum (salt)." All this sounds very modern slang, and most likely it is so. Yet, in the case of "*buster*," our really great East Anglian poet in a *very* early copy of verses, dated Aldborough, 1778, writes:

"Untaught how soon some hanging grave may *burst*,
And join thy flimsy substance to the *dust*."
Vol. ii, p. 312. 1834.

BRABBLE. Of water; as over a shoal, when currents cross, &c.

BRAID. To net.

BREACH. I have heard this form of *break* used with force. "There she lie, the sea breachin' over her."

BRENNER. A sharp gust of wind on the water.

BRIDLES. Ropes from either end of the trawl-beam, joining on to the dredge, or drudge, rope by which the net is worked from the boat.

BROUGE. To scorch? Men and boats "*brougin'* about in a hot calm."

BURN. "How the sea burn!" what you now hear children talk of as "being in a state of phosphorescence." Which is best?

Crabbe writes:

"And now your view upon the ocean turn,
And there the splendour of the waves discern."

Which last line I always take the liberty to read: "And see it, as the seaman phrases, *burn*"; leaving out all that comes after, about "*exploring* flames in the deep," "scooping the wave phosphoric," &c. [How *could* a Suffolk — and such a Suffolk — man write so?]

Digitized by Google

CADE. An old measure for herrings, "*disused*" says Mr. Nall; a cade of *sprats* is, however, talked of at Aldbro' — 1000 of them.

CANT. To turn or slew round, as an anchored vessel with the tide. I do not find the word so used in naval dictionaries.

CHUCKLE. Clumsy, coarse. Among all the fishes of the sea that rise out of the deep to warn the seaman of foul weather — "Up come the codfish with his chuckle head." Halliwell says it means a "fool" in Devon.

CLOCK-CALM. "The sea was all clock-calm."

Calm as one of our venerable old-fashioned eight-day clocks, with its open countenance and steady pulsation. The phrase will die away with them, for the new American timepieces don't hold up the same mirror to nature.

COCK'S-EYE. A bright opening in a dark sky.

A bright thought of some Southwold sailor perhaps, for I was told at Lowestoft that "the Southwold men were great men for the Cock's-eye."

COMPLAIN. A ship or boat begins to *complain* when her nails, seams, or timbers begin to give way.

Almost as good a phrase as "beginning to show symptoms of deterioration," &c.

COMPOSANT. Some years ago a young sailor was telling me of a "*composite*" lighting on each mast of a yawl during a stormy night. I did n't understand the word though I knew the meaning; an older sailor explained that "*composant*" was the proper word. I was not

Digitized by Google

the wiser till I chanced upon the explanation in *Dampier's Voyages.*

"After four o'clock the thunder and the rain abated, and then we saw a *corpus sant* at our maintopmast head, on the very top of the truck of the spindle. This sight rejoiced our men exceedingly, for the height of the storm is commonly over when the *corpus sant* is seen aloft, but when they are seen lying on deck, it is generally accounted a bad sign."

"*A corpus sant* is a certain small glittering light; when it appears, as this did, on the very top of the mainmast, or at a yard-arm, it is like a star; but when it appears on the deck, it resembles a great glow-worm. The Spaniards have another name for it, though I take even this to be a Spanish or Portuguese name, and a corruption only of *corpus sanctum*," [I suppose *the host*, or starry pyx that holds it] "and I have been told that when they see them, they presently go to prayers, and bless themselves for the happy sight. I have heard some ignorant seamen discoursing how they have seen them creep, or, as they say, *travel*, about in the scuppers, telling many dismal stories that happened at such times. But I did never see any one stir out of the place where it was first fixt, except upon deck, where every sea washeth it about; neither did I ever see any but when we have had hard rain as well as wind; and therefore do believe it is some jelly. But enough of this." Dampier's men probably called the word "*corpusant* or *corposant*, whence *composant*, and, after the invention of certain candles peculiar to the nineteenth century, *composite*. What wise children now call it I don't know, whether phosphorescence, electricity, or what not. But they will doubtless smile with kindly pity at 'old Dampier's' *jelly*"; though when *we* were children any theory of "jelly" would have gone a long way in finding favour with us.

CONGER-EEL. Sometimes cast ashore alive and kicking in winter.

I was wondering how so strong a fish suffered himself to be so stranded, and was told (at Felixstow) that it was because of the conger "blinding himself by striking at the stars." Poor ignorant seamen! as Dampier calls them; a sort of men who, as Montaigne says, mainly understand one thing only — which is — their own

Digitized by Google

business — and therefore won't do for members of parliament at all.

CORE OR COAR. To untwist a rope or line from its *kinks*.

CORTON. Next village north of Lowestoft, and only here brought in for sake of a very harmless couplet. When the luggers come in from the North Sea, blowing, raining, &c., why then 't is not amiss to think that

"When you come to Corton,
The way begin to shorten."

DAB. "Flat as a dab," the sea calm-flat, as the flat fish, so commonly called — the learned name of it "I leave," as Suffolk people say — not being myself a dab at such things. Nall gives "*spong*, a calm at sea." An ugly word.

DAN OR DEN. A small buoy, with some ensign atop, to mark where the fishing lines have been *shot;* and the *dan* is said to "watch well" if it hold erect against wind and tide. I have often mistaken it for some floating sea bird of an unknown species.

DART. "Dart before the wind," the wind right aft; or, as I once heard a foreigner say, "*in my behind.*"

"DEEP as the North-star"; said (by the conger-eel man) of a very *wide-a-wake* babe, four months old.

DOGS. Dog-fish.

So terrible to the lugger's nets — gnawing them through with their shark's teeth, as soon as they find themselves enclosed along with the fish they come to devour. I am told they are mostly to be looked for so far out at sea as when "Lowestoft lights are dipping." The beachmen tell me they are a "*specie* of shark," and so I tell them "two of a trade," &c. The full-grown males are "*dogs*," the younger "*pups*," and the females,—"*female dogs.*"

Digitized by Google

DOMINO. Unoccupied (as "*neutral*," q. v.) "The house lay domino this twelvemonth."

DRAWS'L. Draw-sail, a large square canvas, which, its ends being made fast to the trawl boat, is flung overboard in order to draw the boat to windward by action of the tide.

DRIVE. To go herring fishing. *Nall.*

DROPE. Downward inclination.

DUTCH UNCLE. "There were the squires on the bench, but I took heart, and talked to 'em like a Dutch uncle." This, I trust, opens a wide field for conjecture.

FAG OUT. Fray out, as a rope's end. So the "*fag-end*" of anything. [Isl. fæcka, ad paucitatem redigi — redigere?]

FAIR; Clouds running to. "Do you think the wind 'll hold?" "Lord bless ye, look at the clouds a runnin' to a fair like."

FANNY ABOUT. A light variable wind fannies about.

FEATHER-WHITE. "The sea was all a feather-white" with foam.

FEW. Forby gives the word in the sense of "*little*," "a few broth," &c.; but he does not notice a meaning so very common on the coast; not implying "little" or scarcity at all, but simply *quantity*, more or less. "We brought in a good few of sprats," &c.

FIDDLE. "Kept her like a fiddle."

This little piece of wood and catgut, to draw forth whose wonderful speech seemed to Johnson the greatest wonder of human handicraft, has, we know, always had its charm for the sailor,

Digitized by Google

whether on duty at sea, or *not* on duty ashore. Who can resist the delightful saucy "sailor's hornpipe," step or music? I really think the only national dance we have. So the sailor has taken the fiddle to compare the craft he loves to. "Kept her like a fiddle," he says of one who takes care of his craft; "she go like a wiolin," of the smart vessel herself, swift and glib as "the melody that 's sweetly play'd in tune." And, by the way, I have heard them talk of "givin' her a tunin'"—*sc.*, by trying her, her spars, and her rigging, in such a sea and wind, that if she weather all that, she may be relied upon in any case.

FINE WEATHER FLOP. An unexpected dash of water over a vessel's sides in fine weather, and on a smooth sea.

FLAD SKY. *Fled* sky? Cloud that has settled in a bank to leeward.

FLEET OF NETS. Five or six score herring nets make "a fleet."

FOLT. To lap up a wet sail loosely, so as air may get in; *not* the same as *fold*, I hear; perhaps a looser form of it.

FREE-EN. "If the wind free-en a bit,"—*sc.*, slant favourably. *Not* a very happy word.

FRESH-O'-WIND. A fresh breeze.

FOOT-LOOSE. A vessel so disengaged from dock that she can start whenever she pleases. A pretty word.

FRANK. A familiar name for the heron on the river Deben, at any rate; from a supposed likeness to the harsh cry of the bird. So they call out "Fra-a-a-nk!" to salute and rouse him as he stands fishing on the ooze.

Digitized by Google

GAPE. [Pronounced in broadest *Kemble, garp.*] To open the mouth of a set net *(q. v.)* to the tide by means of a gāpe-rope. "His net 's anchored, but he ain't gāped yet."

GIN. "Clear as gin." A sailor's best compliment to water.

GONG. "One half the stitches which form the aperture or mesh of a net," says Mr. Nall, who quotes A. S. *gong*, a step, and *gongel-wafre*, a spider. I have heard the word used for a *gang*, or row of meshes.

GYP. To gut a herring. *Nall.*

HANK. Stoppage. "Come to a dead hank," as by a change of wind, a calm, &c. [Hank, fastening of a gate. *Forby.*] Query *hang?*

HEFT. Anything such as wreck, or rock, that catches and holds the net fast under water. "He 's got a heft since sun-rise"; Isl. hefti *impediri.* [Nall gives "hefty, rough weather or sea. Dan. and Germ. heftig."]

HOBBLE. To go *scroping*, or saltwagin, *q. v.*

HOBBY-LANTERN. The jack-o'-lantern, will-o'-th'-wisp, &c., as given by Forby.

Nor should he (Jack, I mean) need bringing in here, but for a habit of his which I only lately heard of on the coast—namely, Jack's inveterate hatred, or jealousy, (or love?) of any light but his own. He will fly and dash at lighted windows, I am told; and the sailor from whom I learned this knew of a friend who, coming home at night with a lantern, was violently assaulted in that quarter.

HOLIDAY. Any interval which the tarrer or varnisher of a vessel has neglected to cover. "Jem have left plenty of holidays, anyhow."

Digitized by Google

HOME. A home swell. A swell of the sea from with-under as it were, independent of any wind then blowing. "There 's no wind, but a nasty *home* on the beach." So we East Angles, you know, talk of meat *home*-done; thoroughly, to the core.

Nall gives, with something of the same meaning, "*slug*, said of heavy surf tumbling in with an off-shore wind, or a calm," giving several Northern etymons of slugg, slugga, to buffet, thump, &c. I have since heard it called "*slog*"; far better.

HORSES. "Being in trouble with horses" is, I am assured, a never-failing sign of foul weather.

"But what do you mean by being in trouble with horses?" "Well, running away, kicking, pulling at 'em," &c.

I have seen some of your great Lowestoft giants, up to anything in their own element, turn tail, and "cut away" from some very peaceable bullocks. A six-foot Michael-Angelo-made fellow assured me he didn't mind a cow, but "was n't by no means *wropt up* in a bullock."

NOTE.—Cyrus Redding heard from Beckford that Lord Nelson was very nervous when being driven about Fonthill by its master, in a phaeton drawn by two blood horses. Beckford, I suppose, would have been rather nervous on the quarter-deck of the "Victory," at Trafalgar. Some one writing of those times gives a pretty description of seeing some young men-of-war's men ashore on Mount Edgcumbe, poking with very long sticks at a poor snake in the grass. [It was not a Frenchman.]

HORRYWAUR. Fifty pounds to the philologer who will guess this riddle without looking to the end for its solution.

When first I knew Lowestoft, some forty years ago, the herring luggers (which then lay up on the beach, when not at sea), very many of them bore testimony to Wesley's visits to the place, and his influence on the people (see Appendix). Beside the common family and familiar names, such as the William, Sarah Jane, Two

Digitized by Google

Friends, Brothers, and such like; there were the Ebenezer, Barzillai, Salem, and many more Old Testament names; beside the Faith, Hope, Charity, &c., from later Revelation. A few vessels bore names in profane story — such as the Shannon (which, by-the-by, still *reigns)* after Sir Philip Broke's victory; there was even a William Tell (no longer reigning), whose effigies, drest in an English sailor's white ducks and blue jacket, pointed at the wind with a pistol from the mast-head. *That* was about the furthest reach of legendary or historical lore. But *now* the schoolmaster has been at sea, as well as abroad, and gone herring-driving — Bless me! there 's now a "Nil Desperandum," a "Dum Spiro Spero," and last, not least, a "Meum and Tuum"; though in the latter case it was very properly represented to the owners that the phrase being Latin, should properly run "Meum *et* Tuum." Then even the detested "*Parley-vous*" has come into request; and you may hear of a "*scrunk*" of luggers very gravely enumerated in such order as the following. "Let me see — there was the Young William, the Chanticleer, the Quee Vive (Qui vive), the Saucy Polly, the Hosanna, and the Horrywaur!" Of the latter I could get no explanation, until one day it flashed upon me when I saw sailing out among the fleet, the "Au Revoir," belonging to a very good fellow who (according to the custom of nicknames hereabout) goes, as I believe his father went before him, under the name of "*Dickymilk*." [1]

HUDDY. The upper and wider-meshed part of a sprat net. *Aldbro'.*

HUSTLE. "The wind hustle in the trees," &c.—CAPTAIN COOK — himself a collier along these coasts — talks of the tide *hustling*, and also *hurtling*, a ship over to windward, &c.

[1] This custom is not unreasonable. There are of course so many Bills, Toms, Jacks, and Joes, and even so many surnames alike, that some peculiar nickname is wanted to distinguish them. This is supplied from any trivial peculiarity that comes first to hand. I was asking one day why a "*coil-rope boy*" was called "Farmer," and was told, because he once went about in a sort of slop which it was thought smacked of agriculture.

Digitized by Google

JACKSON. "To clap on jackson," to crowd sail; or, as it is sometimes pleasantly called, "muslin."

JIFFLE. To work into. "She 've jiffled into the sand good tidily."

JILL. "Just air enough to jill us along."

JOALIES. Young herrings.

KID. To *signify* by hand and arm (A. S. cydan) how many herrings on board; the arm struck forward signifies *a last;* waved round, a thousand.

Kid, however, signifies by sound as well as by sight. I forgot to mention under "*clock-calm*," that those potent, grave and reverend seniors, the *old* eight-day clocks, are supposed to know a good deal of what goes on in the house they inhabit, more indeed than the masters themselves; fore-knowing, and by some hurried ticking or inward convulsion foretelling, the death of some member of the family. I was told of one distinctly "*kidding*" the approaching decease of his old mistress. "There was no mistake at all about it — why, the old clock fared in the biggest of agony."

KITTY. (Query Kittywake?) The middle-sized gull.

Seeing some kitties flying about some swimming *willocks* one evening, I was assured that the willock, after diving and coming up with a fish, presented it to the kitty, who flew down to receive it. [But query, as to the courteous intention on either side?]

LAST. Ten thousand herrings, A. S. *alæst;* Isl. *lest.*

LAW. The wind turning so as to blow the lugger back on her nets, is said to blow "against the law."

LINT. *Net*, whether before or after being made up into *nets.*

LIPPER. To curl above water, as the *rimple* of the sea or the backs of a *skoal of fish.*

LOFTY. A proper word for a *high* tide: sometimes also called "a slappin'— a ragin'-tide."

Digitized by Google

LŌGUY. (Query a form of *loggy?*) Heavy, slow, dull, as a ship or man.

LUM. The handle of an oar. Isl. hlumm. To *lum* the oars, to let the handles down into the boat without unshipping them. Ir. *leamh*, an oar, a rower. *Nall.*

LUTE. Bent, curved (A. S. Lutian). The curved irons at each end of the trawl-beam are the *lute-heads;* and a *lute* stern is opposed to a square stern. I have seen a lugger described as of a "lute stern," in the registry of the vessel at the Lowestoft Custom-house. I believe the word is scarce known elsewhere.

MACKLANTAN. *Mackle and tan — macklintan* (philologists must settle the orthography), a scanty outfit of clothes brought on board. "Well, you 've brought a macklantan bundle, at any rate."

MAIN. *The main;* land as well as sea. "She got off the shoal and then struck on the main." Thus the word was formerly and generally used: when did the poets give it to the sea only?

MAKE. To increase; sea or wind. "The sea began to make at night-fall."

MAND. Nall writes "*maund,* a large open wicker basket used in the fisheries, and for sowing seed broadcast. I always hear it pronounced as spelt in A. S., the *a* long as in 'demand,' but the final *d* generally cut off." A *mand of sprats* = about 1000.

MARDLE. *To mardle;* to gossip. Forby only gives it "a pond" near at hand, for watering cattle, &c.; "exactly Fr. *mardelle.*"

Digitized by Google

MARRAMS. "The arunda arenaria. Gael. muran, sea reed; Dutch marren, to bind; Isl. *marhalmr*, sea grass." *Nall.* It is the coarse, tufty, reed-grass growing about the Lowestoft Denes, and is called bents, and Bentlands, elsewhere. I have heard *marrams* transformed into *merry-mills.*

MAZY. Sickly. Herrings about to shoot the roe are said to "*have the maze.*" Nall gives deriv. "*masyl* or *mazil*, sekenesse." Pr. Parv. and several old quotations.

MILKMAID'S PATH. The milky way; as if the heavenly milkmaid had spilt her pail as she crossed over. Not so uncouth a fancy.

MITCH-BOARD. The truncated *midship* mast, upon which the lower'd foremast of the lugger leans, while fishing.

MOUSE TO. To tie a piece of twine across the mouth of a hook.

The hooks in a boat's rigging are "moused" by having a piece of twine tied across their mouths, to prevent the rolling of the boat causing them to jump out of the staples.

MUNK. To munk the sail is, as I understand, to fix the tack of a boat's lug-sail to the foremast, instead of to the *bumpkin.*

NAIL-SICK. When a vessel begins to complain in that quarter. So *seam-sick*, &c.

NEIGHBOUR'S FARE. Doing as well as one's neighbours. "I may n't make a fortune, but I look for neighbour's fare nevertheless."

NEUTRAL. Unused; unappropriated. "That ground have been neutral these three years," &c.

Digitized by Google

NORSELS. The short lines supporting, at six inch intervals, the herring net on its rope. A. S. *nosle*, a point to tie with, &c. "Nostylle of nets." Prompt. Parv. *Nall.*

OLD. "An old wind," &c.

Not in the good or good-humoured sense, otherwise so common; "Old Fellow, Old Boy," &c., but quite the reverse, as if dating back to the "Old 'un," par excellence — *Old Nick* (which, by the way, is our most familiar name for him, &c., and implies a sort of sneaking regard, as if he was n't quite so black after all, as painted). So perhaps it may be when sailors talk of an "*old wind*," for a very foul one; an "*old wave*," for one that means mischief; a kind of humourous fling at the elements they are wedded to, for better or for worse. Forby quotes something of the sort from Shakespeare's Merry Wives; when nurse Quickly hears the doctor coming she says, "We shall have *old* abusing of God's patience and the King's English."

I have not been able to discover the history of one member of this most ancient family. "Old Gooseberry," I know; and "Old Sarah," I know; but who is "Old Boots?" he is well known in these parts, too. "Only let me clap a *taups'l* (topsail) on, and I 'll run away from him like Old Boots." King James (Selden tell us) used to say that "old friends were like old shoes, they fitted easiest"; and I believe that old boots would be better to run away in, than new ones. But there 's more in it than this. Let the learned discover.

"PERRY wind; half a gale. Fris. *perre*, a slight stir; Dan. *pirre*, to stimulate." *Nall.*

PICKER. A thornback; and if the word be not properly *pricker*, an odd coincidence with Isl. *piga, a maid!*

POCKETS; along the side of the trawl-net, of which

POKE is the jelly-bag end.

PROUD. Tight or "*taut*." "That rope is rather *proud*."

PRUDENT. I have heard this word thus oddly used con-

Digitized by Google

cerning a ship. "That old Polly is scarce *prudent* to go to sea"; *sc.*, seaworthy.

RAFFLE. The tackle, spars, &c., of a ship.

RAM-FULL. Cram-full. "The harbour ram-full of ships," &c.

RANSACK. To examine and *try* the *norsels* of a net. Isl. *ransak*, inquisitio.

RAWSE. Conglomeration of clay, mud, and other soil, into a sort of rock-work. Is this Forby's *rosil*, ro-silles?

REIGN. To continue in use. "The Hebe was an old ship ten year ago; but she *reign* still, I *hare*."

RIPPIER. "One who brings fish from the coast to sell inland. A. S. *ripa*." *Nall.* But Query?

RIXY. The smallest of the sea gulls. Tern?

RIMPLE. A form of ripple.

ROARERS. The men who shovel out the herrings from the lugger into the ped, or from the ped along the fish-curing floor, with *roaring shovels.*

This reminds one of a song once current on your coast, of which I can lay hold of no more than the burden, I suppose. It was told me by a clergyman.

"The roaring boys of Pakefield
Did n't know what to contrive,
They had but one poor parson,
And him they buried alive."

RODE. "To spawn." Welsh, Danish, Isl., &c. *Nall.*

ROLLER. "A good roller a good rider"; that is to say, the breadth of beam and bottom that will make a

Digitized by Google

vessel roll will also make her ride comfortably at anchor.

I think that Tennyson somewhere uses "roller" for a wave breaking on the shore; perhaps a Lincolnshire word for such a wave as breaks along the low Lincolnshire coast, and which I have heard him say is the grandest wave, except those at the Land's End. The very metre of "Locksley Hall," which describes the Lincolnshire coast, is "*a roller.*"

ROSTER. Rotation, turn.

By some new arrangement — whether sanctioned by the Trinity Board I know not — pilots do not serve ships as formerly, first called on first to go; but according to "*roster*" — each in turn.[1]

SAFER. A freight of fish. "A good safer of mackerel, herring," &c. Nall, confidently, "*Sea-fare.*" But query.

SALTWAGIN'. So pronounced (if not *solwagin'*) from, perhaps, an indistinct implication of *salt* (water), and *wages*. *Salvaging*, of course.

SAMP. To lull; sea or wind. "When the wind samped a little," &c. *Germ. sanft*, of course.

[1] This is very often very convenient for themselves, and very much the reverse for the ship who signals for them. A few weeks ago there were *three* foreign ships off a town not far from yours, one whole day, with flags up for pilots. The beachmen got a yawl ready, and ran for pilot A.; A. said it was B.'s *roster;* B. said it was C.'s; in short, of the several pilots called on, all declined, out of etiquette, and a due sense of *roster*, I suppose. There were possibly other considerations. One among them indeed told me that the yawl could not stand the sea and wind then *rostering;* or, if it could, could n't get alongside the ship to put a pilot on board. I said I supposed the poor beachmen were pretty good judges of what their yawl could do, and of the value of their own lives; and was there not a pilot cutter to go out if the yawls were not sufficient? To which it was replied that it was not a fit day for anybody to go out; that the ships with flags could dodge about very well till next day, &c. I think this *roster* wants re-consideration.

Digitized by Google

SCANDALIZE. To lower the peak of a schooner's mainsail! At any rate, when the sail is so left, she is said to have "her mainsail *scandalized*."

How could my friends have thought of this word, for this purpose? And yet, there *is* something in the *shape* of the word.

SCORE. A cut down a declivity, so well known in Lowestoft town, and at Beccles, I think; but I know nowhere else. It is, I suppose, the same as Yorkshire *scar*, and is easily traced to Iceland itself. The word is also used hereabout as *scour*, in the sense of making off hastily. "I scored along good tidily," &c.

SCROPER. A salwagin smack.

SCRUNK. A shoal (or, quite as properly, *skoal)* of fish, of course; but I also hear of a *scrunk* of wild fowl; of ships; nay, of Dickies on a common.

SCUD. To shake the herrings out of the net.

SEA-RAKERS. A Yarmouth name for the large trawl beams used on the North coast. *Nall.*

SET NET. An anchor'd net.

SHALE. "The mesh of a net; from the *shale*, or netting-pin, thrust in to tighten and gauge it; A. S. *scylan*," says Mr. Nall. I think I have heard the word used for the pin only.

SHANK of lines; a certain length of fishing lines.

SHERE MAN. Share man; who has a certain share in the profits of a fishing voyage. The "*sheer*" of a vessel is its curve from stem to stern.

SHIES. The palisades fixed on the beach to withstand the encroachments of the sea about Felixstow.

Digitized by Google

SHIM — SHIMMER. The glitter of fish coming above water, into the net.

When the mackerel men — after many and many an empty net — come to draw in one with a shimmer of fish in it, they say —

There 's a white,
And a shim,
And another after him;
And a white,
And a lily white,
And a scrunk ho!

SHIP'S HUSBAND; who lays in stores of provisions for the ship. This sounds a fine old term; I dare say is not peculiar to us, but I have not happened on it in print.

SHITTLE-NETS. Nets that have become rolled over and over into a *cocoon*, whether by tide at sea, or wind as they are drying ashore.

SHUT THE DOOR AFTER HIM; as a willock diving, or a man drowning.

SHREEP. To clear away partially; as mist, &c.

SILE. The fry of fish: Isl:—

SLADE ROPE. At the bottom of the trawl net, raking the ground. *Slade*, a simple Isl. word; is still used inland, for a little valley.

SLAKE. [Qy. *Slack?*] An oily calm on the sea, proving, to smell as well as to sight, where the dog-fish is plying.

SMIGS. Small fry of herring, mackerel, eels, &c.

SNOOD. (Pronounced *snud*). The separate end of the fishing line, to which the hook is attached.

Digitized by Google

SOLOMON-GUNDY. Salmagundi, of course; made of pickled herring, minced up raw with pepper, vinegar, &c.

SOU'WESTER. The very useful, but very ugly, oilskin head-gear, used by fishermen, and making their comely faces really look very like some of the flat fish they deal in.

No glossary was needed to tell what a sou'wester is, nor, probably, for the little superstition attached to it. The sailor, arriving from the north seas at nightfall, may go to his home, where the wife is sitting alone, thinking or not of him: just opening the door wide enough, he pitches his sou'wester into the room. The true good wife will run to the door at once, not minding the sou'wester. "But this may be old wives' mardle," said he who told me.

SPOOM. To scud before the wind.

Common in old writers: thus used by Dryden (who owes much of his vigour to his use of *the vulgar*): —

> "When virtue *spooms* before a favouring gale,
> My heaving wishes help to fill the sail."

This word we could well afford to keep in general use, though we scarce want its derivative.

SPOON-DRIFT. Foam (*spuma* is, of course, the original of both words). "The sea was all a feather-white with spoon-drift."

SPOTTY. Partial; the wind; sometimes also "*dollopy*," a word better applied to more substantial stuff, "a good dollop of money," &c.

SQUARE-FLOOD. SQUARE-EBB: when an anchored vessel has *canted* round so as her yards are at right angles to the flow or ebb of the sea.

Digitized by Google

STULL. An extra-large mackerel.

There is a word for the Philologist. Can it have to do with "*stalwart*," of whose derivation the dictionaries make odd work?

STANDARD. What has *worn* a long while; an old man; old horse; old coat; old boat, &c. "That 's a standard, I warrant."

STERN. "It 's a stern night"; like Shakespeare's "*dern*."

STIFLER. "He 's head-stifler at our club, I assure you." Head man; leader.

STOCKER FISH. Refuse, such as thornback, roker, gurnet, &c., given to the apprentices on board smacks as their perquisite.

SUNWAY. The path of the sun's rays over the sea. "Crossing the sunway there." So *moonway*.

SWATCH. *(Swash?) swatch-way*, &c., a narrow channel through a shoal.

SWILL. A basket for carrying fish from boat to shore. It is made of unpeeled willows; Gael. *suil*, a willow; Fr. *saule*, &c. *Nall*.

SWIPE. (Sweep, I suppose.) To *swipe* for lost anchors.

TABERNACLE. The receptacle for a mast.

TATTLE. "A little tattlin' breeze," &c.

TIZZET. A small rope from a fishing vessel's stem, taken by a "round turn" round the warp by which she rides, to make her ride the easier.

TOEING IT AND HEELING IT. A vessel pitching in the sea.

TOM AND JERRY SHOP. A beer-house. My friends were welcome to their "Beggar's Opera"; but they should n't have condescended thus low.

Digitized by Google

TORCH UP. "Once the wood is kindled it 'll soon torch up." Not so bad.

TOW. (Rhyming to "*now*"); nets. "Those over-grown luggers pull so hard on their tow, they tear it all to pieces."

TRAP-HANDED. Deceitful. "A trap-handed fellow." Not so bad, neither.

TRAT-TOW. Tract-tow; track rope; by which a vessel is towed along.

TWILL. To lie alongside of. (Query.)

TWY; TWOY; or TWOYVE. To slew round, or become disengaged from any stoppage. "There she twoy!"—[Wanted a Philologist.]

VEER AND HAUL. To vary. "The wind fare to veer-an'-haul all day long." Why *will* your Lowestoft men say "Veer-and-'*aul*," and so often misplace their *h* like cockneys?

WAKE UP. A vessel beginning to stir herself with a fresh air, after drowsy going. She then begins "*to talk*" also; and, still more lively, proceeds to "pick up her crumbs."

WARP. (Of herrings.) Four herrings; from A. S., Isl., &c., to throw.

Nall thinks, because of the fisherman "throwing out two in each hand at every count." He quotes from L'Estrange's *Household Accounts*, 1522. "Paid x*s.* for bryngyng of vi warpe of stock fyshe and vi warpe of lytill codde called habburdyn, iiij*d.*"

WAYS. On the ways; on the slips of the shipwright, for repair.

Digitized by Google

WENT. The mesh of a net. *Nall.*

WHOLE WATER. Deep water, as opposed to "broken water," which is shallow.

WILLOCK. A Guillemot, I am told.

The same bird that, after "shutting the door after him," presents the kitty with the fish he has re-appeared with. This is not the action of an ill-mannered bird; nor have I seen anything at all wild in his demeanour. Yet, they say, "mad as a willock"; as we on shore say, with equal propriety, "mad as a hatter."

YARMOUTH CAPON, Major Moor tells us, was a name for a red herring; also called a "*Tom blowen.*"

APPENDIX.

I. CRABBE'S SUFFOLK.

Prime.

"We prune our hedges, *prime* our slender trees,
And nothing looks untutored or at ease." *Borough.*

Moor defines "*priming;* pruning the lower, or *wash* boughs of a tree." But Forby, "to trim up the stems; to give them *the first* dressing in order to make them look shapely"; which accords more with the original meaning of the word, and with Crabbe's use of it.

But Crabbe has another word on the same subject, which is not found in Moor or Forby — and where else?—in such a sense; in which sense I am persuaded it *was* used, by some Suffolk people at least, from whom

Digitized by Google

Crabbe caught it carelessly up. It has the true Suffolk stamp about it.

> "Where those dark shrubs, that now grow wild at will,
> Were clipp'd in form, and *tantalised* with skill."
>
> *Parish Register.*

We should now, perhaps, say "*titivated.*"

Tantalize, Dogmatize, Moralize, &c., we are all familiarized with, in some way or other. So much cannot be said for another such word, as properly formed, which Crabbe uses, but did *not* pick up in Suffolk, I think. A too happy lover tells of having, in the midst of his own exultation, met a poor unhappy man;

> "And I was thankful for the moral sight,
> Which *soberized* the vast and wild delight."

Well, the word is worthy of the lines; and the lines of the foolish story they wind up. And this inequality and disproportion it is — this "loose screw" in so great a faculty; together with great carelessness in his later poems, and a want of what is called *Art* in all, that weighs down the popularity of a writer, whose couplets, Johnson, Pope, and Dryden might have familiarly quoted, and whose whole poems, with all their imperfections, will live, old Wordsworth says, at least as long as anything written since — including his own.

Conceit: in the sense of conception — noun and verb. "I du conceit" — pronounced, of course, *concite.*

Ruth's father and mother have been waiting for her — (the passage is so fine that it is even a pleasure

Digitized by Google

to transcribe, and I think no one will grudge to read it) — from morning till evening: —

"Still she came not home;
"The night grew dark and yet she was not come;
"The east wind roared, the sea return'd the sound,
"And the rain fell as if the world were drown'd.
"There were no lights without; and my good man,
"To kindness frighten'd, with a groan began
"To talk of Ruth, and pray; and then he took
"The Bible down, and read the Holy Book;
"For he had learning; and when that was done,
"We sat in silence — 'whither can we run?'
"We said, and then ran frightened from the door,
"For we could bear our own conceit no more."

What became of Ruth — let every good East Anglian who can afford it buy the book and see. What a Dryden line, the fourth!

Like; as we tack the word in full to the end of an adjective; adjective-*like*, not adjective*ly*.

I am sorry to find this good old form supplanted by a vile compound: instead of the sky looking *squally-like, rainy-like,* "my dear friends" *will* say "*squallified, rainified,*" &c., for which they deserve a round dozen. "*Fuimus Troes.*"

But to return to Crabbe. His word occurs in another passage, so fine that I *must* transcribe — one of the best glimpses of a ghost I know — because it *is* but a glimpse: —

"I loved in summer on the heath to walk,
"And seek the shepherd — shepherds love to talk; —
"His boy, his Joe, he said, from duty ran,
"Took to the sea, and grew a fearless man —

Digitized by Google

'On yonder knoll — the sheep were in the fold —
'His Spirit passed me, *shivering-like* and cold;
'I felt a fluttering, but I knew not how,
'And heard him utter, like a whisper, "*Now!*"—
'Soon came a letter from a friend to tell
'That he had fallen, and the hour he fell.'"

Dole. A word we are very familiar with, especially on the coast where Crabbe heard of it before his A B C:

"His very soul was not his own; he stole
"As others ordered, and without *a dole*." *Parish Register.*

Without having any share in the plunder, as *we* know, but I wonder if the word was generally understood? Crabbe felt called on to explain it by a note in another poem:

"He was a fisher from his earliest day,
"And placed"— (No! No! remember your old Aldbro'!)
"And *shot*" his nets within the borough's bay;[1]
"There by his skates, his herrings, and his soles,
"He lived, nor dreamed of Corporation-doles."[2]
Borough Election.

Lastly, the poet in several instances dismisses the final *s* from the 3rd person singular — after our oriental

[1] This recalls a local couplet, which you may, perhaps, find room for in a note. *Loon* is, I believe, the generic name for the diver tribe of sea-birds (French *lumme*); but here-about used for a *specie* which, when seen busied about the broken water along the coast, indicates where the long-shore fisherman had best try his luck. So the proverb runs:

"A Loon in a wash
"Is good as a shilling in a poor man's purse."

Only that *purse* should surely be *pouch*; or still nearer the rhyme, and the sound of the French original, *posh!*

[2] "I am informed that some explanation is here necessary, though I am ignorant for what class of readers it can be required." And he goes on to explain everything; except *the word*, which simply means *a share*, whether of a boat's earnings, or of corporation funds.

Digitized by Google

fashion. I confess to a liking for this; partly because of its ridding us of *one* hiss from our hissing language. And why, as Forby asks, *should* there be such an addition to this single person of the verb? He remarks that the auxiliary verbs do not follow the rule; and he quotes the conjugation of Icelandic *ber (porto)* to prove that our Suffolk usage has very ancient precedent in its favour; 1st person *ber*, 2nd *ber*, 3rd *ber*. That is, "I bear, you bear, he bear"; just as we Suffolk people now talk. Therefore, *I say*, that when Crabbe *say* so, it *do* not shock me, though I would not adopt the usage from him at this time of day. And, certainly, if I wrote verse meant to last (as I am sure Crabbe's *will* last, though I am not sure that he reckoned upon it), I would take care to stick to the tongue that Shakespeare, Bacon, and our Bible have fixed for us.

There are several instances in his books; but I content myself with two: one of which was recited at the Literary Fund Dinner by a poet, who never made any such mistakes — W. T. Fitz-Gerald — and the other passed without a mark of comment under Johnson's own eyes.[1] But the old lion's eye was fast dimming then.

"When our relief from such resources *rise*,
"All painful sense of obligation dies." *Borough Curate.*

"No; cast by fortune on a frowning coast,
"Which neither groves nor happy valleys *boast*, &c." *Village.*

[1] "He is not to think his copy wantonly defaced: a wet sponge will wash all the red lines away, and leave the pages clean." Johnson on returning the MS. of the Village to Sir Joshua.

Digitized by Google

To be sure, the *rhyme* might have *mis*led him, must we say?— or, perhaps, what will sometimes happen, the other *plural* noun in the sentence.

One maxim of Johnson's made a deep impression on Crabbe's mind, says his Biographer — "Never fear putting the strongest and best things you can think of into the mouth of your speaker, whatever may be his condition." This reminds one a little of Goldsmith's joke, that, if Johnson had to make animals speak, his sprats would talk as big as whales. Johnson certainly misrepresented his own great powers by acting on his own advice; and his pupil, who has been called nature's best and sternest painter, and who certainly had as keen insight as any into the larger half of *human* nature, sometimes loses his strong outline by daubing over it. And this, with subjects he had been most familiar with. He does not make fishes talk; but he himself talks of the porpoise having been seen rolling about the day before a gale —

"Dark as the cloud and furious as the storm."

And the sailor, come from the sea, with his children on his knees, and his friends about him, tells them of his dangers:

"When seas ran mountains high,
"When tempest raved, *when horrors veiled the sky;*
"When in the yawning gulf far down we drove,
"And gazed upon the *billowy mount above,*
"Till up that mountain, swinging with the gale,
"*We view'd the horrors of the watery vale.*"

Digitized by Google

When did he ever hear the like at Aldbro', or elsewhere, from a *Sailor's* mouth? Crabbe was thinking of Thompson, and the poets of the century which he was born in, and out of which he had not quite risen into *himself*. Compare the foregoing with the old shepherd's ghost — written 20 years after — when, however, the poet began to err from carelessness, as formerly from mistaken care, perhaps.[1]

Having said thus much of the Poet's *Suffolk*, I must give one word of it from the capital biography of him by my noble old friend, his son George, Vicar of Bredfield, now gone the way of his father. In the admirable account of Mr. Tovell's Farm, at Parham — a perfect Dutch interior — he says that, while master and mistress were at dinner at the main table in the room, the "female servants" were "at a side table, called *a Bouter*." As I could not for a long while get any explanation of this word, I thought the meaning might be — a table in a bight — or *bought*, as sometimes called — that is, in an angle, or corner of the room. At last I heard of some farmers who knew the thing well;

[1] I may add that Crabbe speaks in his *Borough*, of two sorts of vessels common in his day, now not heard of, I believe:

"Far other craft our prouder river shows;
"Hoys, *pinks*, and sloops, brigs, brigantines, and *snows*."

Burney (says the Annotator) defines *pink*, a ship with a very narrow stern; Fr. penque. *Snow* seems something like what we now call a *Bark*; with "a third small mast just abaft the mainmast."

Digitized by Google

that it was properly a "*Boulter* table"; a sort of covered hutch with a machine inside to boult the meal for household use; and, when not so used, with a cover or lid to go over, which might serve as a table for a servant, or a chance guest. And *Boulter* might be pronounced *Bowter* in the same way as (Moor says, and we all know) *colt* is pronounced *cowt;* cold, *cowd;* hold, *howd,* &c.

Mr. Nall was not contented with this explanation, of which the farmers made no sort of doubt; he derives the word from Dutch and Flemish "*die booden,*" the domestic servants. So people must please themselves between the learned etymologist who has to cross the water for a derivation, and the unetymological farmers who went no further for it than the thing itself, which they had been familiar with from infancy.

One story draws another. The mention of Mr. Tovell's farm has recalled it to my memory, and as it includes the poet, his biographer, and one of the most venerable of old Suffolk words, it shall close this gossip, and leave the East Anglian to its usual tone and topics. Whoever has read that account of Parham farm, will remember that, not *Mr.* Tovell, but "*his Missis*" is the chief figure there. She was aunt to the Miss Elmy whom the Poet married, and used to boast that "she could screw up old Crabbe like a fiddle." In the Life there is a story of this good lady's once finding one of her maids daring to scrub — the *parlour* floor! — an office sacred to Mrs. Tovell herself. "*You* wash such floors as these! — get

Digitized by Google

down to the scullery — As true 's God 's in Heaven here comes Lord Rochford to call on Mr. Tovell!" &c. And she whips off a scrubbing-apron, which she calls *her* "*mantle*," and goes down to let his lordship in. It might have been this same servant, who, having been pursued one day by her mistress, armed with a frying-pan, said, when the chase was over, and she could draw breath in safety: "Well, this I *will* say: if an angel of *Hiv'n* was to come down and hire for *Mauther* with missis, she could n't give satisfaction." This the poet heard: and this his son told me — some happy day — or happy night.

Super-superlative Suffolk. Major Moor gives several instances of what we may call super-superlative Suffolk. "In speaking to the character of a couple of live Crossbills — *Loxia curvi-rostra* — the owner, who wanted to sell, affirmed "they were the most docilisist bahds ever I see."

"Oak, we should say, is 'the *lastenest* wood' — the most endurable." (Query endur*ing?*)

"I have, under several articles, noticed some of our rather curious superlatives. But, since all were written, I heard one, I think, surpassing. Walking over a ploughed field with a rustic, and noticing some spear-grass, he said—'It 's the eatenest thing that grow'—that is, the most exhausting, or devouring, of the soil." Moor's *Suffolk Words.*

Digitized by Google

"*Eatenest*," then, was the most surprising superlative the Major had heard up to the time of publishing his book. But he afterwards heard one that surpassed the surpassing. He was one day trying to persuade a keeper not to kill poor Hedgehogs, out of an idle superstition that they sucked Partridges' eggs. "Ah yah, 'Major,'" says the man, "Don't tell me; they are the most *suckeggliest* warmin in the warld!" It is not even certain if the word did not culminate into "*suckeggletiest*."

I have called the man *a keeper;* meaning (if he were of Major Moor's own staff), one who would kill *vermin;* polecats, rats, hedgehogs, &c.; not a *Game-keeper* to preserve tame pheasants to be driven into a corner in troops to be shot for pleasure, and sold for profit. I suppose Major Moor would not have had one such on his estate, had it equalled that of some bull-dog named Potentate, on whose large slice of Suffolk birds do accumulate and men decay; cottages left to ruin lest they should harbour a dog, or a gun, or a poor man (also chargeable on the parish) to use them; so that the labourer has to go miles to and from his daily work. I do not know that Major Moor had a tenderness for a poacher; I think I may assert that he had for any man who should *so far* transgress the law in order to keep himself or his family from starving. Indeed, one fault—and but one—did I ever hear this Major charged with; and that was by a very humane friend and fellow-magistrate of his; who told me that the Major sometimes hindered judicial

Digitized by Google

business at the weekly bench: "You could scarce persuade him of a poor man's guilt."

With this good man's memory, let this gossip come at least to a good end.

Wesley at Lowestoft.

Wesley had a great regard for Lowestoft and its people, as his Journal shows — that capital Journal, from which I think a book might be made for railway reading! — with its glimpses of England, its people and places, 100 years ago. As the *East Anglian* is a native of Lowestoft, and as in its Editor's garden is the brick wall against which Wesley stood to preach his first sermon there, the following extracts from his Journal may find a place here.

1776. *Tuesday, Nov. 19th.* "I opened the new preaching-house at Lowestofft; a new and lightsome building. It was thoroughly filled with deeply attentive hearers."

Wednesday, 20th. "Mr. Fletcher preached in the morning, and I at two in the afternoon. It then blew a thorough storm, so that it was hard to walk or stand, the wind being ready to take us off our feet. It drove one of the boats which were on the strand from its moorings out to sea. Three men were in it, who looked for nothing every moment but to be swallowed up. But presently, five stout men put off in another open boat, and, rowing for life, overtook them, and brought them safe to land." [I hope this was no Salwaging job.]

Thursday, 21st. "I preached at Beccles. A duller place I have seldom seen."

1779. *Monday, January 15th.* "I went to Norwich in the stage-coach, with two very disagreeable companions, called a gentleman and gentlewoman, but equally ignorant, insolent, lewd, and profane." [Thank God, the two former qualities are *never* to be met with now, especially in first-class carriages.]

Digitized by Google

Thursday, 18*th*. "I preached at Lowestofft, where is a great awakening, especially among youth and children; several of whom, between twelve and sixteen years of age, were a pattern to all about them."

1782. *Thursday, October* 31*st*. "I went on to Lowestofft, which is at present far the most comfortable place on the circuit."

1788. *Thursday, October* 23*rd*. "We went to Lowestofft, where the people have stood firm from the beginning."

1789. *Monday, October* 6*th*. "I preached at Loddon, North Cove, and Lowestofft. When I came into the town it blew a storm; and many cried out, 'So it always does when he comes.' But it fell as suddenly as it rose; for God heard the prayer." [I suppose "the town" means not Loddon, but Lowestoft; people remembering how it blew *once* when Wesley came 12 years before, as he has told us.]

1790. *Friday, October* 15*th*. "I went to Lowestofft to a steady, loving, united, society. The more strange it is that they neither increase nor decrease in number."

Wesley was then 88 years old, and, with none of the pains, conscious of the infirmity of age, of which he says he had not felt a symptom for 86 *years*. This was probably his last visit to Lowestoft; and on this occasion probably it was that Crabbe, the poet, saw and heard him — saw him, with his long white locks, assisted up into the pulpit by two deacons; and heard him apply to himself those lines from Cowley's *Anacreon*:

"Oft' by the women I am told,
"Poor Anacreon, thou grow'st old," &c.

Crabbe detested Dissent, new lights, sudden conversions, &c. But, like King Harry, he liked A MAN; and he saw and felt that Wesley was a very true and venerable one. He often spoke afterwards of his venerable look, cheerful air, and "the beautiful cadence he gave to these lines." See *Crabbe's Life*, by his son.

Digitized by Google

To the Editor of the East Anglian.

DEAR SIR: Last Christmas I sent you a lot of sea-phrases, all the while conscious of others which I could not quite recover from memory, or noted down somewhere where I could not lay hands on them. Several of these have turned up since; several new to me, and several so familiar that I forgot they might be new to others, added; here is Christmas come again; and, if you again care to betray your grave readers into a little seasonable fooling as at this time last year, here is a little at your service, from yours truly,

E. F. G.

BAD BREAD. "Come to bad Bread"; to come worse off, whether by word or other usage.

BEAN. "To throw in a Bean"— to put in one's oar — throw in an objection; or (as I once heard an old-fashioned Farm-wife say to her husband — "Joe, bor, you must hull in an Obistacle." She was speaking of an ill-devised marriage of her son's.

BLIND SAIL. A sail that hangs so low as to blind the steersman to his course.

I don't know what figure of speech this is called, any more than why a nut without a kernel is called a blind nut. Nor why a sailor, after he had been up all night saving men's lives (and all "for Love") in the gale of Friday, February 13th, 1869, said to me the morning after: "If the wind had n't samped as it did, we should have had the shore blind with wrecks before dawn." "Poor ignorant Seamen!"

BAWLY-BOAT. A large yawl-like boat used for *Salvaging* purposes; swiping for anchors, &c. Halliwell quotes from Cole, "*Bawlin, big.*"

Digitized by Google

BED-FAST. Bed-ridden; a good word; probably not limited to sea-faring speakers.

BRUSTLE. A compound of *Bustle*, and *Rustle*, I suppose. "Why, the old girl brustle along like a Hedge-sparrow!"—said of a round-bowed vessel spuffling through the water.

I am told that, comparing little with great, the figure is not out of the way. Otherwise, what should these ignorant seamen know of Hedge-sparrows? Some of them do, however; fond of birds as of other pets — Children, cats, small dogs — anything in short considerably under the size of — a Bullock — and accustomed to birds-nesting over your cliff and about your lanes from childhood. A little while ago a party of beachmen must needs have a day's frolic at the old sport; marched bodily into a neighbouring farmer's domain, ransacked the hedges, climbed the trees, coming down pretty figures, I was told (in plainer language) with guernsey and breeches torn fore and aft; the farmer after them in a tearing rage, calling for his gun — "They were Pirates! — They were the Press-gang!" and the Boys in Blue going on with their game laughing. When they had got their fill of it, they adjourned to Oulton Boar for "Half a Pint"; by and by in came the raging farmer for a like purpose; at first growling aloof; then warming toward the good fellows, till — he joined their company, and — insisted on paying their shot!

BLOW OFF. To brag, boast. Also, as thus: "Well, if they 'd call'd on me, I 'd a' blown off a song like the rest."

BRŌT-TOW. (As I suppose, from the derivation suggested to me, viz., A. S. *gebrotu*, fragments; but sounded *Braw-toe)*, scraps and fragments of rope collected to make coarse paper of.

An old fellow — an old Waterloo fellow too — used to go by the name of "Old Brawtoe" among the beachmen, because of his dealing in this line.

Digitized by Google

BULL. "He know no more of Herrin'-drivin' than a Bull does of a Sunday." And again, "He spuffled about till he 'sweat like a Bull.'"

BUTTER A CAT'S PAWS. Not a phrase, but a fact; being a charm sometimes resorted to by the "ignorant" hereabout to attach a cat to the house, for which, as they gravely say, "She 's a bringing up."

BUTTERFLY. Considered lucky, and therefore tenderly entreated, when straying into house, or net-chamber. I am told by a learned Professor that the same belief prevails in India.

CARDS. Though often carried on board to pass away the time at All-fours, Don, or Sir-wiser *(q. v.)*, nevertheless regarded with some suspicion when business does not go right.

A friend of mine vowed that, if his ill-luck continued, over the cards should go; and over they went. Opinions differ as to swearing. One Captain strictly forbade it on board his Lugger: but he also, continuing to get no fish, called out "Swear away, lads, and see what that 'll do!" Perhaps he only meant as Ménage's French Bishop did; who, going one day to Court, his carriage stuck fast in a slough; the Coachman swore; the Bishop, putting his head out of the window, bid him not do that: the Coachman declared that unless he did, his horses would never get the carriage out of the mud. "Well, then," says the Bishop, "just for this once then."

CARAVAN-HAT. The old-fashioned Poke-bonnet; or the present fashion "produced" by the modern "Ugly"; like the tilt of a covered cart.

COACH; COACHED. Out of pocket. "I 'm coach'd," or "I 'm Coach."

Digitized by Google

CHOPP'D HAY. Smuggled tobacco.

COMPANY-KEEPERS. Ships that sail, as well as Lovers who "walk," together. "That old Jemima and Woilet (Violet) are rare company-keepers, they are."

DEE. "Steady as a Dee"; *Die* is the thing meant, I suppose, because of its four-square solidity of figure. "The Old Girl"—Ship, of course—"fared right silly at first, but, when we got into deep water, she went as steady as a Dee."

DOUBLE-TIDES. I know not if this name for *double-work* is peculiar to us; but I think it must belong to such estuary rivers as ours. However, our Suffolk Crabbe offers us a pleasant illustration in this picture of a thrifty, but unpenurious, couple in their little Farm.

"Few were their acres; but with these content
"They were each pay-day ready with their rent.
"And few their wishes; what their farm denied,
"The neighbouring Town at trifling cost supplied.
"If at the Draper's window Susan cast
"A longing look, as with her goods she pass'd,
"And with the produce of her wheel and churn
"Bought her a Sunday *robe*[1] at her return,
"True to her maxim, she would take no rest
"Till care repaid that portion to her chest.
"Or if, when loitering at the Whitsun Fair,
"Her Robert spent some idle shillings there,
"Up at the Barn before the Break of Day
"He made his labour for the indulgence pay.
"Thus both, that Waste itself might work in vain,
"Wrought double-tides, and all was well again."

[1] So, in another of Crabbe's Stories, a young Farmer makes love "in his Sunday *robe*"; which certainly is *not* Suffolk.

Digitized by Google

EGG-BOUND. Probably an inland word; but it was only from one of the beach I heard it. He had a pair of—what does the reader think?—Turtle-doves in his net-loft, looking down so drolly—the delicate creatures—from their wicker cage on the rough work below that I wondered what business they had there. But this truculent Salwager assured me seriously that he had "doated on them," and promised me the first pair they should hatch. For a long while they had no family; so long "*neutral*" indeed as to cause grave doubts whether they were a pair at all. But at last one of them began to show signs of cradle-making, picking at some hay stuffed into the wicker-wires to encourage them; and I was told that she was manifestly "egg-bound."

FAKE. A Take, or Catch. I suppose from Danish: as I find in my old Haldorsen *fæ* (Dan. *feck), impetrare, obtinere.*

FLIP, FLOP. The alternate flapping of the sails from side to side when the swell is more than the wind, or takes it out of the sail, and (as was said to me), "You don't move a Nutshell in an hour." More wearisome to the sailor than many a capful of wind.

FLURRIES. Sudden, and partial, commotions of the Sea, as over a shoal, but sometimes unaccountably in deep water. "I never knew the *Say* (sea) in such a takin'; all flurries like."

FOUL. Used in a fair sense: "When I get foul of those nets," &c.: take them in hand to repair, &c.

Digitized by Google

FORCE-PUT. Forced. "I did n't, till I was right force-put to it"; or "till I came to a force-put."

FRAPP. A crowd, crush. "There 's a pretty frapp of luggers down about the Humber, I warrant."

FRORN. Frozen. "I stood at the helm till my fingers were right down frorn."

FROTHY. Too light on the water (a vessel), as from insufficient ballast: such as I heard said, "Come a breeze, the old girl would blow away like a Thistle-blossom."

FRIDAY. By some a change of Weather — even from bad to better — is look'd for on a Friday. I have often laughed at this, and — found it right.

GAST-COPE. (I know not how else to write it, nor how at all to account for it), "Going gast-cope," without hire, or pay, as a boy on his first trial voyage.

GINGERBREAD-GILT. The gloss of Fancy, or Pretence. "He 's a fine fellow with his new business now: but, once come a kink in the rope, it 'll soon knock the Gilt off the Gingerbread." Gingerbread is also any ornamental carving or gilding about a ship's bows, &c.

"GOOD AS GOLD" is a good thing; but "Good as *old* Gold" is a better.

GOWRY. Greedy, voracious.

GRACE. "Laid up in Grace"; laid up "in lavender," away from common use.

HOME. "At home," in one's right wits.

HOT. "Tides run hot just now," *sc.:* when, "like a

Digitized by Google

sluice," or "like a soldier's horse"—in the sailor's eyes, a doubly-portentous phenomenon.

HERRIN'-SPINK. *(I* thought "*Heron-spink*"), the Golden crested Wren, often caught by the hand while "latching" in the rigging, or among the gear during the North Sea Fishing.

These little birds, it seems, are then crossing the seas for the winter, and have been found, I am told, cluster'd almost like bees along the hedges near Caistor: so tired as to be taken by hand on shore, as by the sailors at sea. I find they call the bird "Woodcock Pilot" further north; being supposed to herald the Woodcock two days in advance.

HUES. "*Old Hues.*" The Tan water in which nets have already been soak'd, and preferr'd for a fresh infusion, as retaining somewhat of the former strength.

HALF-AND-HALF. The lugger started some 40 years ago on the principle of crew and owner sharing the profits.

Here one is still talking of "*Luggers*," while they are all turn'd, or turning, into "Dandies"; that is, the great Lug-foresail becoming a fore-and-aft Mainsail. By this change the vessel loses something of her old character and grandeur; but she gains vastly in handiness, security, and (in the long-run) speed. For the old Lug, though a fine fellow, was a clumsy one; taking, at the best, some ten minutes to shift over, with all hands called up to the work, and, in anything of a gale, nearer half an hour; the "green hands," or countrymen, not so much hauling as hanging on, to keep themselves from going overboard. Fancy all this time and labour lost in turning, board after board, through your narrow seas, in pitch-dark tempestuous nights; the great ruthless screw-steamer holding on her noiseless way, and they unable to get out of it, lying like logs on the water. Whereas the Dandy Mainsail shifts over in half a minute, with two pair of hands. Why not then have

Digitized by Google

thought of all this years and years ago? And now, for your Lowestoft men to be indebted to the example set them by their Yarmouth rivals! Foolish fellows!

IN-BRED. "He would n't take off a halfpenny (discount) to-day: but offered to take off Sixpence in the Pound next month, when the stuff 'll be eighteen pence dearer. That 's inbred work, *I* call it." (The reader may call it what he pleases.)

IVORY. "The wind sprung up, and the Sea begun to show his Ivory."

JOOP. (A form of "Whoop," I suppose.) "When those Penzance-men see us go out on a Sunday, Lord! how they would joop and hallor after us." [And well they might. You Lowestoft men who go down to the West for Mackerel should follow the honest custom of the country.]

KICKLIN'-STRING. On which a Warp of Herrings (apt to be as indefinite as "Half a pint of Beer") is carried, hung through the gills. The naval Dictt. give *Keckling-string*, old rope used for much the same purpose as *Services*.

KID.

This ancient A. S. word has been noted in my last year's letter; where, by the way, it should be added, that, whereas the Arm struck forward signifies 1000 Herring, it signifies 100 Mackerel; and the Arm struck up, and then "dung down," signifies *less* than 1000 Herring. The word also, as we saw, implies not only actual and present knowledge, as in this case, and as I have heard of the Trees "kidding the wind"; but (as in the case of the great clock) some mysterious presentiment of what is coming to pass. I am told that, as the *home* of the sea *kids* a coming wind, the stomachs

Digitized by Google

of the sea-sick kid it before even the hoam does: another very unpleasant form of Home-sickness! Such sufferers by anticipation are called *weather-kidden;* mostly the "green" country hands who come up fresh from *terra firma*, to work the capstan on board.

KIDS. The compartments *on* — deck (not "on — *deck*," remember!) in which herrings are stowed.

LAIG. (So sounded, if not "*Lake*"), a chasm in the cliff at Hopton, running from that village to the sea. This must surely be Isl. Lag, *locus depressus.* Voss, says Richardson, gives *lake* as Latin *lacus*, connected with the Greek word for a rent, or fissure; not necessarily, though naturally, including water.

LAST COME LAST. At last. "The old gentleman fared long upon the drope, and, last come last, give way altogether."

MANOR. I did not at first understand what was meant by a ship "wreckt upon the Manor." What did that mean? Why, stranded above the ebb, to which the Lord of the Manor's right extends. And if the vessel not only strike, but go to pieces there, he claims a fee from the owner. Think of that last drop in the cup! To be wreckt, half-drown'd oneself, and one's ship quite lost, and then to have to pay a fee for the privilege of her knocking to pieces where she lies! I was going to say one would forget one's own — but the pun is too bad even for Christmas.

MACARONI. A fore-and-aft Schooner, without square yards. [Eh! Mr. Editor? Et ego in Arcadiâ — In such a vessel do I sail withal.]

Digitized by Google

MOTHER. When a Lugger does so well that another is built out of her profits, she is said to be "Mother" of the new one. Thus, by pedigrees as quaint, if not so long, as those of Race-horses, the Linnet might be mother of the Leviathan; the Leviathan of the Little Polly; the Little Polly of the Zebedee; and Zebedee the mother of as many as you please.

MUTE. A vessel in size between the Coble and the Keel.

NAKED MAN OF CŎTHY. The BLUE ANCHOR Inn at Covehithe, still called after some former Sign of a Wild Man, or Black Boy, I suppose.

NEW MOON. When first seen, be sure to turn your money over in your pocket by way of making it grow there; provided always that you see her face to face, not through a glass (window)—for, in that case, the Charm works the wrong way. "I see the little Dear this Evening, and give my money a twister; there was n't much, but I roused her about."—N. B. *Rouse* sounded as *house*.

["*Her*" meaning the Money, not the Moon. Every one knows of what gender all that is amiable becomes in the Sailor's eyes; his Ship, of course—the "Old Dear"—the "Old Girl"—the "Old Beauty," &c. I don't think the Sea is so familiarly addrest; *she* is almost too strong-minded, capricious, and terrible a Virago, and—he is wedded to her for better or worse. Yet I have heard the Weather (to whose instigation so much of that Sea's ill humours are due) spoken of, by one coming up the hatchway, "Let 's see how *she* look now." The Moon is, of course, a Woman too; and (as with the German, and, I believe, the ancient Oriental people, "the blessed Sun himself a fair hot Wench in a flame-colour'd taffata," and so *she* rises, *she* sets, and *she* crosses the Line. So the Timepiece that measures the hours of day and night. A

Digitized by Google

Friend's Watch going wrong of late, I advised Regulating; but was gravely answer'd that "She was a foreigner, and he did not like meddling with her." The same poor ignorant was looking with me one evening at your fine old church which sadly wanted regulating too: lying all along indeed like a huge stranded Ship, with one whole side battered open to the ribs, through which "the Sea-wind sang shrill, chill"; and he "did not like seeing her so distress'd"; remembering boyish days, and her good old Vicar (of course I mean the *former* one: pious, charitable, venerable, Francis Cunningham) and looking to lie one day under her walls, among his own people—"if not," as he said, "*Somewhere else.*" [1]]

NEW YEAR. It is thought lucky, on first going out on New Year's day, to meet "a big man"; not big in paunch, but in height and breadth, and all the noble proportions "that may become a man." Lowestoft is a lucky place to live in for this; provided there be not many French Luggers in port, nor many of the young English "Quality" at the lodgings. But it is not the time of year for them.

NAILS. Some very tough old gentleman, or incorrigible Ironside of a Boy, may be called "Hard as Nails."

NOW AND AGAIN. Repeatedly.

OLD BONES. "That child 'll never make Old bones, I misdoubt," *sc.*, live to be old. And if he should, Mr. Editor? "Sixty years when they be gone will appear as short as one." The landsman likens our lives to the Grass and the Flower of the Field; and the seaman, not irreverently, and, as I am told by those who understand it, very expressively —

[1] Some months after, seeing the Church with her southern side restored to the sun, the same speaker cried, "Well done, Old Girl! Up, and crow again!"

Digitized by Google

"Man that is born of a Woman
"Has a very little time to live:
"He comes up like a fore-topmast Staysail
"And down like a small flying Jib."

P. (Simply so sounded) of an Anchor; its barb, or fluke. Qy. French *pied?*

PAPER-STUFF. "Why, her spars and *taikle* (tackle) was only so much paper-stuff; in a manner of speaking."

PEA-SOUP. "Regular as pea-soup"—a figure from the Navy, I suppose.

PENCIL-WORK. "His room is swept as clean as pencil-work."

PIN-PRINTS. Scraps of "Gays" stuck together for children to stick a pin into at random, and so to claim a prize for their own.

PINCH. When the falling tide has left its mark on sand or shingle, it is said to have *pinched.* A pretty word, Mr. Editor.

PUP. Any under-sized thing. I have heard of "Such a Pup of a House—of a Chapel—and even of a Church!" Any place in short may be called a Pup, where, as they say, "there aint room to swing a Cat round."

PROUD AS A HORSE. The Sailor generally regarding that creature as showing so much of the Devil, with all its rearings, prancings, and "Ha Ha's!" The Landsman may retort that the Sailor's *Rocking-horse* is quite as unruly a beast, plunging, snorting, foaming, and carrying itself and rider to the bottom.

Digitized by Google

PUFF THE GAFF. To blow a secret. "He thought to get off clear, but his mate puffed the gaff, and they were soon after him." This phrase calls for a nautical Philologist.

PUNT. The Lowestoft lug-sailed long-shore boat.

RATTLIN' SAM. A term of endearment, I suppose, used by Salwagers for a nasty shoal of Corton coast.

RANGE. Swell of the sea; "There 's a terrible range into the harbour when the wind blow strong from the South."

RIDE TO WIND. When in the slack, or lack, of Tide, a vessel rides head to wind at her anchor. She is then "wind-rode."

RIPS AND TRUCKS. Odds and ends, fragments. Moor gives "*Truck*, rubbish; a field, or bank, foul from spear-grass, docks, &c., would be said to be 'full o' truck.'"

ROOMS. The spaces between a boat's thwarts; thus divided, and named: 1, Fore-peak; 2, Fore-room; 3, Well; 4, After-room.

ROOMLY. Roomy; "a good roomly boat, she."

ROCKSTAFF. "So I 've heard say; but it may be only Old wives' Rock-staff," or "Rock-stuff!" Anyhow, such yarn as old wives spin.

ROVER. A *slink*, ill-conditioned codfish.

RUN IN. "Well, mate, how much do you run us in to-night?" *sc.*, treat us to.

RED CAPS. Formerly, I am told, the Master-boat among the Luggers; she that had raised most money by the

Digitized by Google

voyage, distinguished her crew with red caps, in token of victory.

RUTHER. Rudder; so *Lather* for ladder, &c. I remember (and always with awe) "Thou shalt do no Mur*ther*!" in our old village church. On the other hand, *thrash* hereabout becomes *trash*; "I'll give you a good trashin"; *three* becomes *tree*"; "one, tu, tree"; and when the wind blow you may hear it "*trummin troo* the riggin." This last comes nearer, I suppose, to the Teutonic *trommen*, *trommelen*, &c. Among these words do not let me forget Threshold, which hereabout becomes "*Troshel*" — "over the Troshel."

SAMSON-POST. The pedestal-post of the mast from deck to keelson. There 's a fine word, Mr. Editor, to begin letter S with.

SCARE. To "get the scare" seems to mean "*give* the scare." "He was best man at first, but t' other got the scare of him in the end."

SCRAM. Odds and ends, and leavings, of victuals.

SCUTCHEONS. Wooden baskets shaped somewhat between Butchers' trays, and Coal-scuttles, with handles a-top, to carry *fresh* herring. *Roarers* are for salt.

SERVICES. Pieces of old lint, rope, spun yarn (*spunnion*, you know) wrapt round rope or warp to prevent its chafing.

The word is not peculiar to these parts; but is noted here because, among the Luggers, beer, biscuit, and cheese should, according to old usage, be handed round at this ceremony, which comes close on the voyage.

Digitized by Google

SHAKE CAP. Another form of "Pitch and Toss"—guessing how many Heads, and how many "Women" among so many Halfpence shaken together in a cap, and then turned down on floor or deck.

SKEET. (I suppose, *skate*), to skim on the surface.

SHOTTENER. A shotten herring.

SHROOK. Those who are scared at "*shruk*" may prefer this milder Perfect of "shriek."

SMELL THE GROUND. A vessel, I am told, loses the control of her helm in proportion as she nears the ground; and so it is said "to smell it."

SHIMMER. Not only, as before said, the glitter of fish coming out of the water *on*-deck, but of the *safer* of fish itself. "I should like to come in with a 7 last shimmer of fish": *sc.*, *safer*. Which recalls to me that Mr. Nall's confident Etym., "*sea-fare*," which always seemed very doubtful, might possibly be changed to Isl. *sæfn*, *congeries*.

SLITE. Wear and tear. "That fore-sail have had a deal of *slite* this last winter." I suppose it is the same word as *slit* (as wīnd, wĭnd) and perhaps nearer to Isl. *slita*, *atterere*.

SMOLT. A calm. "It fell to a smolt toward evening."

STOVE DOWN. "There was an old Gannet a watchin' us aloft; so I threw him a Mackerel; he turn'd his old eye upon it, and *stove down*, and clean'd him off in a wink." Qy. from what verb?

SPIT IN BOTH HANDS. Do; for a good bargain.

Digitized by Google

SPRAT'S EYE. A sixpence; but this surely was between the days of the ancient and modern Groat.

SIR-WISER. *Sa'wiser* — (I can no nearer!) — a game of Cards which can only be play'd between an Adept and a Novice, and only once.

The cards are dealt evenly between them, back upward; each alternately plays one; and whoever turns up a knave loses the stake agreed on. If the Novice do so, the course is clear; but if the Adept, by an under-squint at his own forthcoming Card, perceives a Knave, he pitches it, inadvertently as it were, face down, instead of up, on the table. The Novice, seeing this, says, "Come, Old Fellow, let 's see this like the rest" — and so himself turns up the fatal card. What can the name be? I was told, "Why, I suppose you become *wiser Sir* by the trick." *If* that were probable, one might almost conjecture "*s'aviser*," from the French, who are expert at such leger-de-main.

THOLE. As every reader knows, the peg between two of which the oar works. But I hope no reader will ever come to know what it is to "live upon a thole," as I have heard say of a half-starved dicky: "in a manner of speaking."

THREE-STICKER. Salwag*ee* for any three-masted ship; thrice blest, if she be, or promise to be, in trouble.

TOM TAILOR. By this name is the Mother-Carey's chicken known in these seas.

TRIM-TRAM. The Yarmouth fore-and-aft 'long-shore fishing boat.

TRUCK. Any sort of cap, or "*tile*" for the head.

"TURN LIKE A TOP." "Turn like a Fish"— said of any vessel that comes handily round, does not linger in stays, &c.

Digitized by Google

TWINE-MASKING. The cord by which the net is attached to the *Norsels;* the *norsels* being attached to the outer cord of all, called the *Net-rope.*

WEEP. The nails weeping (with rust) is one sign of the ship's *complaining.*

WINGS. The separated sides of the Lugger's hold, in which the fish are stowed.

WIND-PROUD. A cloud big with wind.

WEASEL. A small buoy fastened at such a depth to a vessel's anchor as only to show above the low water of a spring tide. "So as, if you happened to break your anchor-*cheen* (chain) a-ridin', and you 've to nip off in a hurry, you know where to find your anchor again, ever so long after." [Salwager, with a wink.]

In addition to my own stock of Words and conjectures, I am allowed to quote some from the private letters of a far better Scholar, the present Librarian of Trinity College, Cambridge: a Suffolk man (indeed a near Neighbour of yours) as you know, Mr. Editor, and duly regardful of its ancient Dialect. The first two paragraphs refer to two of my Sea-words.

Your two words 'Frap' and 'Smolt' turn out upon examination to be really good Old English. For the former, Halliwell refers to Chaucer, Troilus and Cressida, iii, 410, where it is used in the sense of 'company':

"Cassandre, Helein, or any of the *frape.*"

It occurs again in the Lincoln Morte Arthure, as printed by the Early English Text Society, l. 2091: 'Fyghttez with alle the *frappe* a furlange of waye.'

Digitized by Google

'Smolt' is equally good. It occurs as an adjective in 'Sir Gawayne and The Green Knight,' and as a verb in the Alliterative Poems of the 14th century published by the Early English Text Society. The Anglo-Saxon *smolt* is "serene, placid." Another form is *smylt;* and we find "*smylte ren*, gentle rain, *smylte weder*, fair weather." So there is no doubt that your friends at Lowestoft have preserved two exceedingly good old words.

Frackfull. I was very much pleased to find the other day that our Suffolk *frackfull* is the same as Chaucer's *fret full;* that is, freighted or fraught full. It occurs in the *Legend of Good Women*, 1115: "Ne jewell *fret full* of rich stones."

There is a passage in Chaucer which I have always thought a Suffolk man could understand better than any one else. It is in the *Knight's Table*, l. 2462:

'The *groyning* and the pryve enpoysonyng'; where I cannot help thinking that '*groyning*' means the same as '*graining, strangling.*' The Dictionaries give it '*discontent*'; which I venture to think is weak, especially as we have 'murmuryng' in the line before. '*Grain*' appears to mean 'the windpipe,' or rather 'the gullet.' I found in an old book the other day, Bright's *Treatise of Melancholy;*—"From the stomach it (*i. e.* rhewme) riseth by the *graine* of the throte."

"*Sammodithee*," noted by Sir Thomas Browne. It is only a corruption of '*So mot I the*," "So may I thrive," a frequent phrase in Chaucer. For example, it

Digitized by Google

occurs in the *Wife of Bath's Prologue*, l. 6114, ed. T. Wright.

> "Sche knew myn herte, and my privete,
> Bet than oure parisch Prest, *so mot I the.*"

[Nall says the word has been lately unriddled by Mr. Spurdens as a corruption of "Sam onto thee! the constant response to the toast 'Here 's t' ye!'" And I have been told that it is still the Bargeman's, or Wherryman's answer to "Good Day t' ye!" on the Yare and Waveney. So Mr. Wright adds:]

I see on referring to Sir T. Browne's Works (ut supra) that the same explanation is given of "Sammodithee." If it is used now in reply, it must have lost its original meaning, and must be supposed to signify "Same to thee!"

'*Hobble*, or *Hovel*' (which, hereabout means *Salwagin'*). Halliwell gives "Hovellers (as Kentish) for people who go out in boats to land passengers from ships passing by." And in the *Times* of January 12th, 1869, was a note from Yarmouth: "A few days since, the Secret, a boat usually called a *Hoveller*, left the harbour for the purpose of sweeping for anchors in the roadstead, and in the Wold." Halliwell further explains *Hoblers* as sentinels who kept watch at beacons in the Isle of Wight. Now a 'hobler' was a light armed soldier, so called, says Blomefield, from his riding a 'hobby' instead of a charger. Such a one would naturally be employed as a scout; and watching the signals of beacons would fall to his share. Is it possible that the boats which

Digitized by Google

watch the signals of vessels are therefore called Hobblers?

I have got one step nearer to the solution of what Forby calls '*Four-releet*,' and '*Three releet*.' These are properly 'Four-way-leet' and 'Three-way-leet.' Four-way-leet becomes first Four'yleet, next Four releet; and then 'Three releet' is formed by analogy. In a book which I am editing for the Roxburghe Club (an English 15th century prose translation of a French poem) the word '*Weylate*' occurs as the rendering of '*Quarrefour*.' In Harsnet's *Declaration of Popish Imposture* (1603), p. 130, I find "How were our children, old women, and maides afraid to crosse a Churchyeard, or a *three-way-leet*, or to goe for spoones into the kitchin without a candle?" What '*leet*' is I am not yet sure.

Do you remember an old rhyme which I certainly have heard in Suffolk, about the Slow-worm and the Viper? It runs thus:

> "If the Slow-worm could see and the Viper could hear,
> Then England from Serpents would never be clear."

Or thus:

> "If the Viper could hear and the Slow-worm could see,
> Then England from Serpents would never be free."

I want to quote it and cannot be certain which is the proper form.

Bishop Barnabee. About the first part of the word I have no opinion to offer. It may be the result of alliter-

Digitized by Google

ation. But I think that *Barnabee* is a corruption of 'burny-bee,' as if either 'the burnished or shining-bee,' or 'the burning or glowing bee,' from its gloss or colour. Halliwell gives the form 'Burnie-bee,' as used in Norfolk, and he has moreover 'Burn-cow,' which he defines as a species of beetle, but which I have no doubt is the lady-bird, another name for which is 'lady-cow,' so that 'burn-cow' is a combination of the two names. By the way, I think 'lady-bird' may be a corruption of 'lady-bud,' and this again of 'lady-bug,' and yet I see in some slips of Bedfordshire words collected by Mr. Burgon, of Oriel, which I have now before me, that in the neighbourhood of Nismes the children call it '*gallinette* dou bon Diou.' 'Lady-bug' is the name in Kent and throughout New England. In Bedfordshire it is called 'Goolabee,' which looks like 'golden-bee.'

'*Mardle*' (meaning *Chatter, Gossip*) I cannot help thinking should be spelt without the 'r.' There is an Anglo-Saxon word *mædlan* or *mathelian*, which means 'to talk,' and looks like the parent of our word. [The word, however spelt, means street gossip. Crabbe describes that of Farm-house Wives, but such as every one who remembers the "*Society*" of Country Towns must recognise as reigning there also; not only among Wives but Spinsters also, all talking at once, and consequently at the top of their voices, and the prosperity of the "*Party*" measured by the amount of noise. Crabbe, probably, suffered enough from it in both cases.

Digitized by Google

"Theirs is that art which English wives alone
"Profess — a boast and privilege their own;
"An Art it is where each at once attends
"To all, and claims attention from her friends,
"When they engage the tongue, the eye, the ear,
"Reply when listening, and when speaking hear:
"The ready converse knows no dull delays,
"But 'double are the pains, and double be the praise.'"]

APPENDIX.

I see that, in my last year's extracts from Wesley's Journal, I omitted to quote his *first* visit to Lowestoft.

On the 10th October, 1764, he was at Yarmouth; and on "Thursday, 11th, I was desired to go to Lowestoft, in Suffolk, nine miles south-east of Yarmouth. The use of a large place had been offered, which would contain abundance of people; but, when I was come, Mr. Romaine had changed his mind; so I preached in the open air"—[by the old brick wall in your garden, Mr. Editor] — "a wilder congregation I have not seen; but the Bridle was in their teeth. All attended; and a considerable part seemed to understand something of what was spoken; nor did any behave uncivilly when I had done: and I believe a few did not lose their labour."

And again, "Tuesday, Feb. 24th, 1767, I was desired to ride over (from Yarmouth) to Lowestoft. The house would not contain one-fourth of the people, so that I was obliged to preach in the open air; and all behaved with great seriousness."

This Journal of Wesley's is a valuable as well as very interesting record of England during fifty years of last century. For Wesley was a very shrewd as well as very truthful observer of the many Men and Cities he visited. Anyhow, his account of Lowestoft a hundred years ago applies almost as well to its present condition as an account of it published this

Digitized by Google

very year in a creditable Magazine—*All the Year Round*—one of the best, if not (as I think) the best, of all such Serials, rarely without some one article more than worth the cost of the whole. The article I refer to is one of a series entitled "As the Crow flies," and written in that smart, and so-called "*graphic*" style which the genius of the writer who conducts the Paper has made so popular, but which is more agreeable to Fiction than to Fact. Well; in the number for June 26th of this year, the Crow has flown to Lowestoft, and takes a Bird's-eye view of the Town, the Trade, the People, &c., as they *are*. Passing over a few picturesque inaccuracies, such as Nelson's Barsham being "close to Lowestoft" (it is ten miles off "as the Crow flies"); and the Waveney being "re-wedded to the Sea" (from which it was never divorced; now as always running into it along with the Yare at Gorleston) we will begin with the Beginning.

"According to Mr. Walcott, the name of the town in Domesday was Lother-Wistoft" *(Lothu-wistoft;* but that may be Mr. Walcott's error)—"that is, the toft or cluster of houses by the Loth (low) river; and he supposes that Lother and Irling, the Danes, after the conquest of Essex, in 1047, established a station here to receive Danish colonists. The old Danish fishing town, on which a modern watering-place has engrafted itself,[1] *stands on an eminence backed by hills* and with broad sands at its feet." (The "Old Town" stands on *the* hills, or hill, itself, "backed" by no other hill whatsoever)—"Below the houses on the brow of the ridge, hanging gardens slope to *the alluvial land lying between Lake Lothing and the sea.*"—(The hanging

[1] And, compared to the original Stock, with its warm red roofs running irregularly along the beach and up the hill, what an ugly offshoot is this "Modern watering-place" of uniform drab-white and slate, looking rather like some Quaker settlement than a proper harbourage for gay summer visitors. Let any one *but* a Quaker—or an Esquimaux—or an Englishman (who in general hates rich colours, and especially where they are most needed to warm and light up his cold, colourless, skies and seas) look from the sea, or from the end of your Pier at the contrast between Wesley's Old Town to the right, and the "modern Watering-place" on the other side of the Bridge.

Digitized by Google

gardens below the houses on the ridge do *not* slope "to the alluvial land lying between Lake Lothing and the Sea," but to the sandy *denes* left by the receding of the sea.) "The beach along the shore is a *strip of shingle*, from which runs the *great shoal called the Pakefield Flats*, probably submerged land: but the sands of the denes, in front of Lowestoft, *are never overflowed.*" (The sands of the Denes in front of Lowestoft *are* sometimes considerably overflowed by the sea, as in last year's High Tides. No "*Pakefield Flats*" are marked in any chart; but — what the writer has omitted — the Holm Sand *is* marked; a far more considerable protection to vessels riding in the North Roads than either the Newcome or Corton Sands, which he distinguishes as such.)

And now, coming to the Town itself, as it *is;* "The town boasts some *twenty-five luggers and fifty half-and-half boats*" —(Enquiring at the Harbour Office, we find there are *Two hundred and fifty Herring Luggers*, of one sort or other) — so that when "it is calculated that the nets of the Lowestoft and Yarmouth fishermen, if placed in a straight line, *would reach two hundred miles*"— Why, as each Lugger's nets average over a mile, those of the Lowestoft boats alone would more than cover the distance. "The town now boasts *one thousand six hundred houses, and a population of more than six thousand seven hundred and eighty-one persons.*" (In 1861 there were, including Kirkley, 10,066 inhabitants, and most probably by this time there are 13,000: though none are engaged in the "Danish Cattle trade," to which we are told "the North Pier" *is* "chiefly devoted"; that trade having become quite extinct since 1858.)

In short, however correctly the Crow may descant upon other "locacities" (as a superfine Commercial Traveller called it), in this case he seems not himself to have visited Lowestoft at all, but to have flown backward to some foregone account, which he has not even correctly reported.

Digitized by Google

And now, Mr. Editor, will you, by way of winding up this rambling Christmas number, find room for some poor verses relating to the Sailor's "Somewhere else," however irrelevant to the general purpose of your Magazine. They were found pencill'd (whether of his own making or not) in the Prayer-book of a poor lad who died of Consumption at sea on board of the Forfarshire. Poor verses indeed, whosesoever they are; but I remember the Great Poet of our day — not Mr. Browning — pausing to murmur over that "single bursting bubble"; while the Great Novelist (say Moralist) — not Mr. Dickens — thought there must have been a hundred bubbles rather than one. The reader may choose; between a Calm, with the ship moving "a Nutshell in an hour"; or driving along through the foaming water in a breeze. I give the verses just as I copied them from the well-used Prayer-book:

"He sleeps; but oh! he sleeps not there hard by
"The hallow'd Building or the Village Fane
"Where oft' in youth he knelt, and pray'd to lie,
"Far from the tumult of the restless main.
"The sullen waves close o'er him: but there 's not
"A stone to mark the burial of the Brave;
"A single bubble bursting marks the spot
"Where rests the Sailor in his Sailor's grave."

The Prayer-book enclosing these verses was sent home, together with other of the lad's chattels, to his father by the Mate of the Ship, with the following letter:

"You wish to know your Son's dying words and wishes, and I am certain he explained them himself to me more than any one on board of the ship. Poor man, he used to tell me many a time about his sister, and lament her loss to him, little knowing he was to die of the same, and he used often to say if he got safe home this time he would not go to sea again any more, but he would try some business ashore, and nearly his last words was to me that he had seen her come into his Cabin, and some more angels with her, and he called out aloud to

Digitized by Google

me to come and see them, and he told me she had wings and they all fled up the skylight. So tried to persuade him he was dreaming, but no, he would not be put of his opinion. God bless him.

"MAGNUS HARPER.

"January 14, 1853."

[This is all Magnus has time to say; but he means what he says. "God bless him!" A good fellow, I 'll be bound, wherever he is — here, or "somewhere else" — "Sit anima mea cum" — Well, at any rate, I should like a pipe and a glass of grog with Magnus Harper.]

A CAPFUL OF SEA-SLANG FOR CHRISTMAS.

[*From the East Anglian of January*, 1871.]

ABROAD. Out to sea; the wind "getting abroad" of a night betokens bad weather coming. Whereas, the Sea-fowl winging that way of an evening promises well: they make Shore-ward when the wind gets out.

ALMANACKS. "We 'd nothing else to do, so we took to making of Almanacks," &c.: forecasting the weather.

ALL SAIL STANDING. All clothes on when "turning in" at night, so as to be ready for action when turning out in the morning.

ASLEEP. The sails are *asleep* when steadily filled with wind which there is not swell enough to roll out of them, and the vessel they waft spins along like a Top, which is also said to *sleep* at its fastest. And,

Digitized by Google

as natural, this is more likely to happen when the sails are heavy with the moister air of night. Then it is the ship flies "like a Witch."

BARGAIN. A quantity. "There was a rare Bargain of Flies, Wasps, &c."

BARK-WEB. A knot running into a tree, and into the wood cut from it for ship's timber.

BOLD. A bold Boat; a bold Coast; rising high above water, with which the Seaman himself "*makes bold*" when coming close in shore.

BORE OF THE TIDE. The full strength of it, which is at its strongest about half-tide, among these narrow seas. "Right in the Bore of the Tide." This we know is the name of the tidal wave, elsewhere called Ægir, and, as with so many of our substantives, the simple perfect of the verb Bear.

BRISTOCK. The small Knee-timber within a boat's bows, to strengthen them.

BULLOCK'S JIMMY. Bullock's head, in much request on board ship to make "*Supe*" of.

CAST. A boat left broad-side on the beach, not hauled up "end on." "That yawl have been off — she 's cast, I see."

CANDLE OUT OF BINNACLE. "He soon ran the candle out o' the Binnacle"; *sc.*, all the money out of his pocket.

CLUNK. To whet a knife on brick or stone.

CRACKERY. Crockery, China-ware; a happy hit!

"CURLEW carries a shilling on his back"; *sc.*, can be sold for a "Bob."

Digitized by Google

DOLLAR. "Shine like a Dollar"; said by a Sailor of a Pony that he got up after her holiday in the marshes — duly holding a bit of bread to windward, he told me — and her coat was "as fine as a star," he said, "shine like a Dollar, that ta did."

DOG DASH. Sappy timber. "I told him he 'd put a little of Dog Dash into the Lugger's side.

DRABBLE-TAIL. Draggle-tail; a vessel so *lean* aft as to "slap her starn" into the seas; also called a "Slap-tailer." Two Guernseys colloguing over a half-pint: A., "You know, Duffer" (B's "*nom de mer*"), "that old Jemima of yours is a regular Drabble-tail." B. (who has hitherto vindicated his ship as best of the bunch), "Hang her, she 's an old — witch. Let 's have another half-pint."

EYE OF A BOAT. "The mast is too much in the eye of the boat," meaning, stept too forward in it.

ELSINORE CAP. Made of the northern black dog's skin and hair.

FEETS. Feet; the *s* intensive added to the end instead of the beginning, I suppose. "She was feets and feets under water by the time we got to her." The Irish footman did not go so deep when he announced to the Drawing-room, "Mrs. Foote and the Miss Feet!"

GAFFERS. Smacksmen; so called by their rivals in the lugger.

GANGER. A leader; captain of a gang.

GAY-GOWN DAY. "What the likes of us sometimes say in

Digitized by Google

fine weather at sea; thinkin', I suppose, of the women ashore."

GILDINGS. Mutilated fish; bitten by *Dogs*, &c.

GOG-ON. What we call "egg on."

GUY. Trivet for the fire.

HEART OF THE WIND. The strength that promises endurance. A less determined wind has no "*Weight*" in it; no *Heart;* a very comfortable apathy, by the by, in a North-easter, unless to those who are running away from it. "A hard-hearted wind for ye, Master!" will be sung out by some one going before it as he passes some wind-bound captain looking disconsolately over his ship's quarter.

Before I leave the word, I will add a Suffolk superlative of which it is "the heart," almost as good as any of Major Moor's, quoted in a former number. It was said to me by one honest Guernsey of another to whom I owe the greater part of this Sea-slang, though he remains quite unconscious of the debt, even after reading his own words on a fragment of Proof inadvertently given him to light a pipe with — "HE 'S THE BEST-HEARTEDEST FELLOW THAT EVER I KNEW."

HIT-WOOD. To run a Yawl's bows right upon the vessel she is come after, and, by so doing, anticipate the job of salvage from any other yawl that may be in the same chase. This is not done without risk in a heavy swell; the bow of the yawl sometimes getting smashed in the collision, so as she has to return home with what of bows she has left "cocked up" in the air, the crew being all got astern to keep them above water.

HOB-GOB. A nasty jumping sea.

Digitized by Google

HUFF-UP. The sea beginning to "*make*, and shew his Ivory."

HOMER. A larger *specie* of Picker, or Thornback, marked with black spots, and by some accounted better eating — as well it may.

HUDDENS. Those timbers along a vessel's sides that touch the stem at one end, and the stern-post at the other.

JENNY-GROATS. Pearl-barley.

JILLY-BOWLS. "Great Jilly-bowls of Waves." Query?

JIBBET ABOUT. To waggle, as a loose topmast.

KICK. "All the kick," all the Go, the Fashion.

"KICK OFF THE NEST." To dislodge — oust. [In which latter word the *s* intensive has got itself into the middle of the word.]

LAND-FALL. The sight, or approach, of land.

LARGE. Going before the wind; with all sails filled, and "asleep." I also hear hereabout of "Large with child," reminding one of a certain quaint passage in Midsummer Night's Dream, and surely better than the three-letter'd syllable in common use. Neither, of course, is for tongues or ears polite.

LONG-LEGGED. Of a more than average draught of water for the vessel's size. As for great ships, we know, that as the fine old Proverb says, "Great Ships ask deep Waters."

LOWDIES, or LOWDERS. Woodlice that eat into ships' timbers: to be trapped, some think, in leaves of brake strew'd about, as flies in what they call flycatchers.

Digitized by Google

LUCKY BEE. A humble, or, as *we* say, Bumble-bee, got out to sea, quite from his latitude, and welcomed as a bringer of good luck if he alight on board. He is not always so tenderly used ashore, by the boys, at any rate, who, chasing him for his honey, as I was told, would pull him in two directly he was caught, "*lest he should eat up his own honey*," if he got the chance.

MARTEN-TAILED. What we Landsmen called "Swallow-tailed," when describing the absurd coat by which "the Quality" distinguish themselves.

MEWZY (so sounded). "The sky look mewzy to windard"; meaning thick and ill-promising.

MITTEN. "Dead as a Mitten"— that is the sea-phrase. Another article, as well appreciated by the Seaman, is commonly used for the same comparison ashore. A Gamekeeper near Lowestoft was describing how some Dignitary of the Church — he knew not what — was shooting with his master. Some game — I know not what — was sprung; and the Gamekeeper, at a loss for any correct definition of his man, called out, "Blaze away, your Holiness!"—"And blowed if he didn't knock it over as dead as a Biscuit!"

MOON-RAKING. A vessel with so much *shere*, or Curve, as to be like Wordsworth's "Crescent Moon."

MUCKER. Anything worthless—"Only a Mucker!" Less than a hundred years ago, "there would have been a time for such a word." We read (in Walpole, I think), of the beautiful Lady Coventry excusing her-

Digitized by Google

self for mopping her face (to which, being so painted, more excuse was due) by saying the heat was such that "she was all of a muckibus."

MILCH-ROE. The soft-roed Herring. Sometimes I am told a Herring is found with hard and soft roe both; and is called a "John and Joan."

NAGER *(a, as in "acre").* I suppose *neger, nigger.* "Such a *nager* of a Boy!" I have heard "a Dutch nagre," as formerly a "Dutch Uncle." How came our peaceable neighbours to stand for Signs of terror as the old Turk did?

NET-EYES. The first 'long-shore Herring; why so called nobody knew.

ON END. Continuously. "I did n't sleep right *on end*, but by starts like."

POKER BEER. Beer heated with a red-hot poker; about a pint to a poker, I am told. There are worse things, and, as Lamb said, better.

POLTER (long *o*, as in Poker). To range along the beach in search of whatever the sea may wash up.

RAISY-FACE. A vessel with her stem, or any forward part of her, too high above water may be called "a proper raisy-face Lady."

RENEWED. When a whole new piece of *Lint* has been added to the old, nets are "renewed"; when the old Lint is simply repaired, they are "*Bet ups.*" And good nets, well bet up, and well renew'd, will *kill* themselves catching fish, they say, before wearing out.

Digitized by Google

RIND. Skin and bone; "A mere rind of a woman."

ROMAN-NOSED. A Boat with a very curved stem. "A regular roman-nosed Lady, she."

SCALL-GAT (*a*, as in "shall"). A *score* through the cliff near Pakefield.

"SALT AS NEWGATE." What the Adjective has to do with the Substantive "I must leave," as we say in Suffolk.

SHE-PIPE. A cracked pipe that won't smoke where it ought.

SHIN-UP. *To swarm up* a mast; a feat in which the legs have as much to do as the arms.

SIDE-WIDE. Set aside.

SOLDIER. A red herring; or the remainder Tobacco in a pipe. "I say, just wait till I 've smoked this Soldier out."

STROOP. The wind pipe.

SUED (so sounded). A vessel touching the ground.

SPIN A COPPER. Tell a yarn.

SUMPY. Water-soaked — water-logged.

STREAM-LEACH. Waifs and strays of weed, wood, and sometimes Bees and Flies, &c., cohering by I know not what attraction in a narrow line, sometimes three or four miles long, far out at sea; A. S. Lœcan, An. lœcan, *allicere?*

SOMETHING: A SOMETHING. "She lay and kicked about *a Something*, I can promise you."

SPRING A LUFF. As when the wind freshens or turns upon you.

Digitized by Google

"When there 's a Lull
"Keep her full;
"When there 's a Puff
"Spring a Luff."

SUN-DOG. A prismatic appearance about the sun, prophetic of foul weather. As a sailor said to me—"Lookin' right *fast* at you"—*fast*, not like the modern young lady, but "Like a Lion," he said.

SWOFFY. Muddled with drink. I have heard "*swodgy*," which, I suppose, is connected with the more innocent liquor that makes a *swidge* of dry places inland. When a man recovers from *his* wet, he goes about "solid and sober" once more.

SCOLTER (*o* long). A larger and more whale-like Porpoise, more frequent in the North Sea, a great jumper out of the water, the young making a piteous infant cry when caught and brought *on* deck, while the mother swims about and about, looking for her lost one, and not to be comforted.

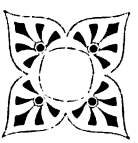
SWATTOCK. "She"— a skittish ship—"took me right off my legs, and brought me down a rare *swattock on* deck."

Here intensive *s* is got to his old place again, if the name of a Game at Cards which Salwagers pass time away playing, while waiting for their prey, may be taken as the original word. At this game it is not the winner — but the loser — who gains, in the payment of as hard whacks as can be administered by a rope's end, or knotted handkerchief, which is called "The Money," kept under the Dealer's guernsey, and paid by the hands of all the players round into the successful candidate's hands. And the name of this pastime is "ABRAHAM WATTOCKS."

And with this your motley Correspondent makes his third, and probably last, bow to the grave audience of the *East Anglian*.—E. F. G.

END OF THE SECOND AND LAST VOLUME.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

TABLE OF CONTENTS

VOL. I

PAGE.

Portrait of Mr. Fitzgerald (by W. Griggs, after a photograph).

BIOGRAPHICAL PREFACE vii

OMAR KHAYYÁM'S GRAVE xxv

OMAR KHAYYÁM'S LIFE 1

Tomb of Omar Khayydm (from a drawing by William Simpson).

OMAR KHAYYÁM'S RUBÁIYÁT. First and fourth editions 20

Notes by Mr. Fitzgerald 76

Notes by the Editor 83

LIFE OF JÁMÍ 97

Persian design of a game of Chugan (after a MS.)

JÁMÍ'S SALÁMÁN AND ABSÁL 109

APPENDIX 158

AGAMEMNON, FROM ÆSCHYLUS 163

EUPHRANOR 245

POLONIUS, A COLLECTION OF WISE SAWS 329

ESSAYS ON CRABBE 461

VOL. II

SIX DRAMAS OF CALDERON:

The Painter of His Own Dishonour 11

Keep Your Own Secret 105

Gil Perez, the Gallician 177

Three Judgments at a Blow 243

The Mayor of Zalamea 319

Beware of Smooth Water 383

SUFFOLK SEA PHRASES 457

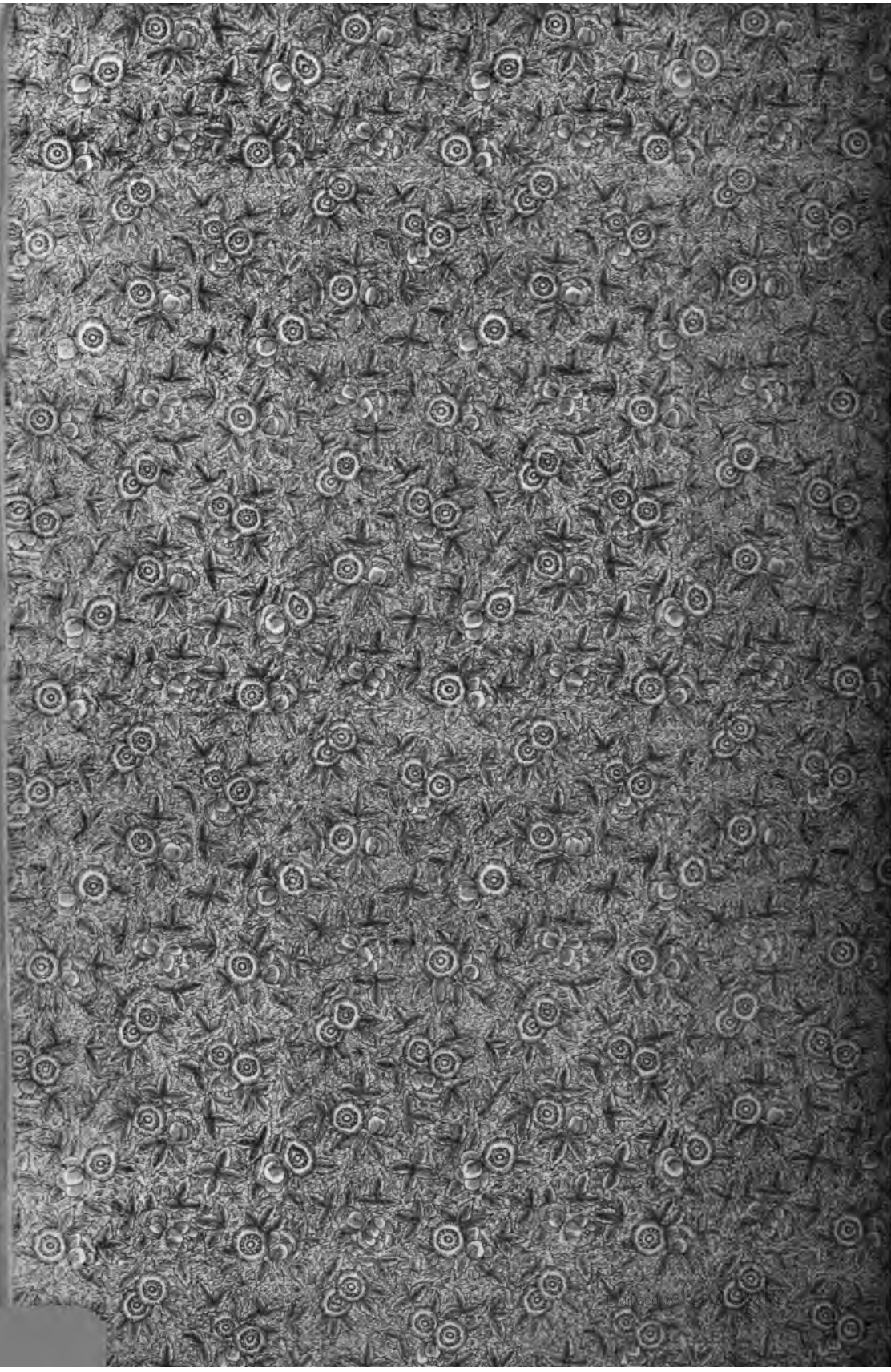
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



This book should be returne
the Library on or before the last
stamped below.
A fine of five cents a day is inc
by retaining it beyond the spe
time.
Please return promptly.

DUE DEC 17 1930

DUE NOV 8 '37

Digitized by Google

Widener Library
3 2044 090 316 787

Digitized by Google